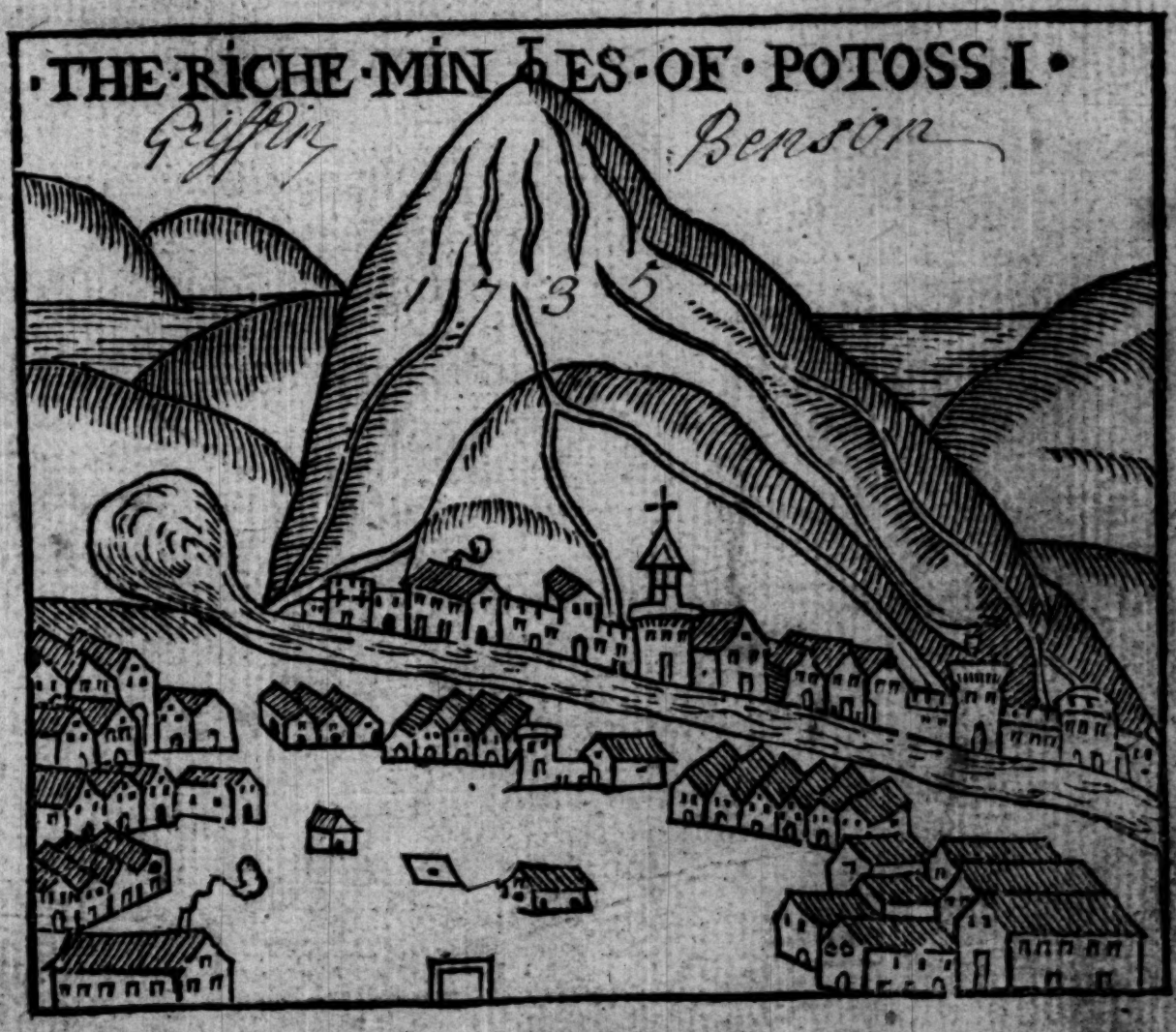
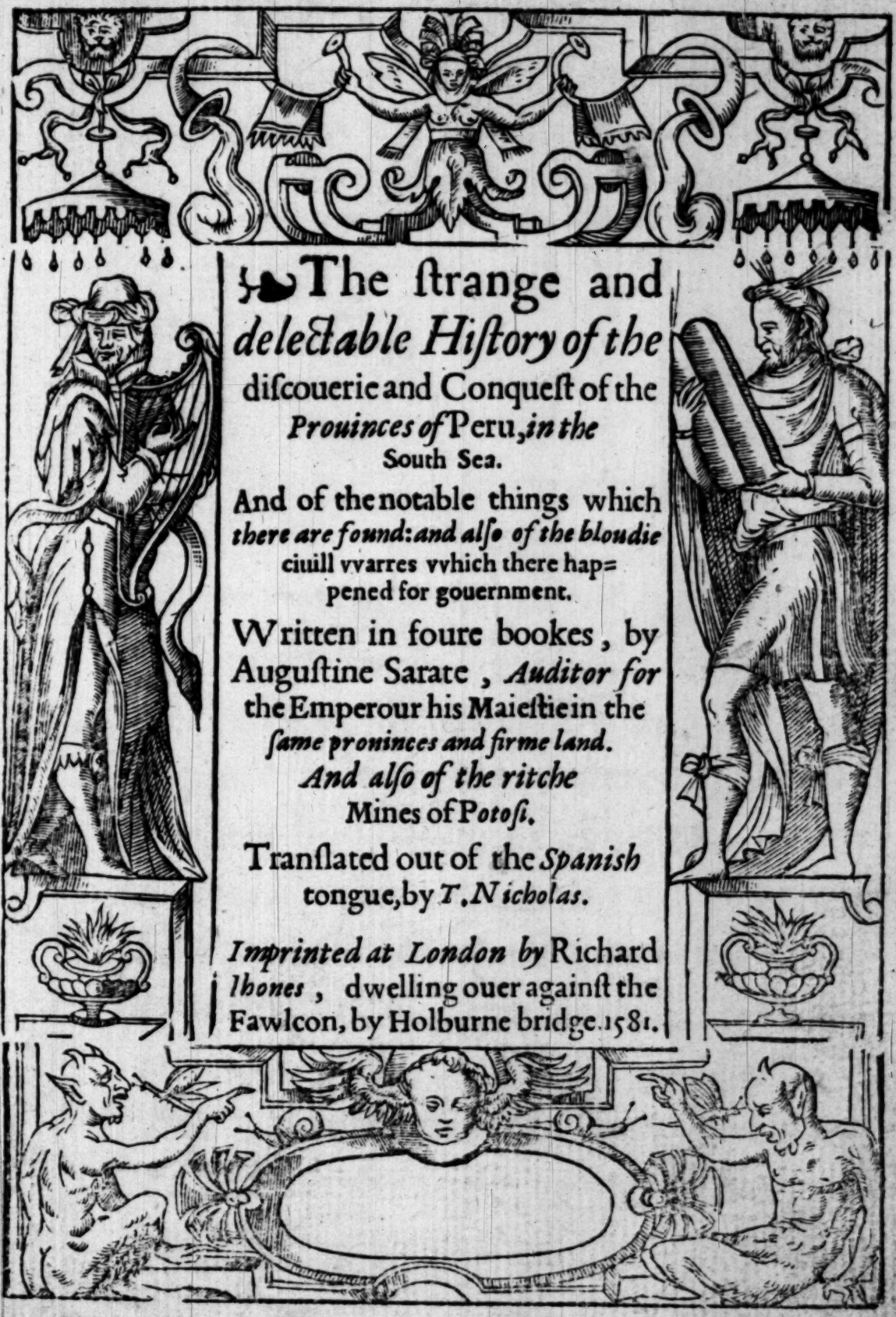
THE
DISCOVERIE AND CONQVEST
of the Prouinces of *PERV*, and *the Nauigation in the South* Sea, along that Coast.
And also of the ritche Mines of *POTOSI.*



¶ *Imprinted at London by* Richard Ihones. *Febru 6. 1581.*

THE



The ſtrange and *delectable Hiſtory of the* diſcouerie and Conqueſt of the *Prouinces of* Peru, *in the* South Sea.

And of the notable things which *there are found: and alſo of the bloudie* ciuill vvarres vvhich there hap= pened for gouernment.

Written in foure bookes, by Auguſtine Sarate, *Auditor for* the Emperour his Maieſtie in the *ſame prouinces and firme land.* *And alſo of the ritche* Mines of *Potoſi.*

Tranſlated out of the *Spanish* tongue, by *T. Nicholas.*

Imprinted at London by Richard *Ihones*, dwelling ouer againſt the Fawlcon, by Holburne bridge. 1581.

113

TO THE RIGHT HO-
nourable, Master Thomas Wilson,
Doctor of the Civill Lawe, and one
of the principall Secretaries, to the
Queenes most excellent Majestie.

LVllius, and Caius
Plinius, wrote that
neither Polie nor
Rethoricke seemed
sweete or delecta-
ble without the ornament of Eloquence
Yet an Historie, of whatsoever sorte it
be written, doth please and delight:
because, men may thereby knowe,
the successe of things happened, to the
knowledge whereof, the nature of man is
bent yea, the tale of a Plowman, is some-
time delightfull to the bearer, especialite
when any new thing is discovered.
And where the stile of this historie in our
English tongue is not, nor at the least, I cā
not polish as learned mē might require.

Yet

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE, Maister *Thomas Wilson*, *Doctor of the Ciuill Lawe, and one* of the principall Secretaries, to the *Queenes most excellent Maiestie.*

TVllius, *and* Caius Plinius, *wrote that neither* Posie *nor* Rethoricke *seemed sweete or delectable without the ornament of eloquence Yet an Historie, of whatsoeuer sorte it be written, dooth please and delight: because, men may thereby knowe, the successe of things happened, to the knowledge whereof, the nature of man is bent: yea, the tale of a Plowman, is sometime delightfull to the hearer, especiallie when any new thing is discouered.*

And where the stile of this historie in our Englisth tongue is not, nor at the least, I cã not polish as learned mẽ might require.

Yet

Yet the troth and pith of the matter vttered in plaine sort shall suffice giuing licence, as much (as in me lieth) to whosoeuer that will take the paines, to write it ouer againe, to beautifie the same, as to him or them shall seeme conuenient: as often times, hath happened among the Greeke *and* Latine *Historiographers and Translators.*

The Author of this woorke, right honorable, was a Gentleman of woorshipful stocke or linage, he was highlie esteemed of the Emperour Charles *the fift: vnto whose Maiestie, he was sometime* Secretarie *in his roiall counsel of iustice, and afterward ordained* Auditor *of accompts of the reuenues appertaining to his Maiestie in the Prouinces of* Peru *and firme lande.*

This well minded Gentleman, after the writing of this Historie, feared the pub-

publishing hereof for two principall causes: The one, least the discendent of such as had committed things not woorthie of praise, would conceaue some euill oppinion of him: or els the issue of the vertuous and noble sort, would iudge the praise and commendations of their progenitors sufficiently set foorth according to their deserts: In consideration whereof, he called to remembraunce the oppinion of Horatius, *which was, that no Historie should come to light vntill nine yeares, were fullie past after the action thereof.*

This oppinion liked him not, but rather thought it more cõuenient, that Histories woorthie of writing should abide in scilẽce for the space of lxxxx. yeeres, thinking that in so manie yeares space, the linage and offspring of the one sort might consume, and the race of the noble and vertuous, to be contented with the

commendation of their Aunceſtors.

The Kinge of Spaine *that now is, hauing peruſed the originall Copie of this Hiſtorie, requeſted mine Author to publiſh the ſame in Printe: and in accompliſhment of his Maieſties commaundemẽt he hath ſo doone. And the Engliſhing of foure bookes of his worke, I moſt humbly here preſent vnto your Honor.*

I may at this day, God be praiſed, boldlie write that, where the Spanish *and* Portingall *Naciõs dare glorie of their diſcoueries & Nauigacions, with great commendations of their Captaines,* Colon Vaſco dela Gama, Magalanez, Hernando Cortez: Don Franciſco Piſarro, & Don Diego de Almagro. *Now may our moſt gracious Queen, moſt iuſtly cõpare withall the Princes of the world, both for diſcouery & nauigacion.*

The

*The Discouery of the Portingall East Indi*a, *was atchiued in* 26. *moneths, & the West India, in shorter space:* Magalanez *returned not to manifest his doo-inges: But our valyant and noble minded Captaine,* Maister Francis Drake, *in his Nauigation, was occupied more, or nighe three yeares: In which time, he sayled, and attained to the knowledge of the East, and West course, which none at any time had euer atchiued.*

His paineful trauaile, and maruailous Nauigation, was not obtayned with white handes, perfumed gloues, daintie fare, or softe lodging: no, no: Honour *is not gotten with pleasures, & quiet mindes. For the sweet Roses groweth among Thornes: yet the ignorant will iudge, that perpetuall Fame and heauenly Felicitie, is a thinge to be gotten with facilitie and ease. But if the poore Sayler*

should sit as Iudge, I am sure that hee would say, how extreame hunger, thyrst, hard lodging vpon Hatches, foule garmentes, blustryng stormes of winde, with Hayle, Snowe, bitter colde, Thunder, Lightning, and continuall perill of life, leadeth the hie pathway to the Court of eternall Fame. *The honour of our good Captayne and company, lieth not in my Pen to set out accordingly: therfore, I remit the same to sutche as hereafter shall iustly sette foorth his paynes and trauell: My humble sute, is to beseech your Honour, to accept this woorke into your patronage, and the Almightie graunt your harts desire.*

Your honours at commaundment, *Thomas Nicholas.*

TO THE READER.

THe doubt which hath ben held, gentle Readers, vpon the verefiyng, by what way it was possible to passe into the Prouinces of Peru, I meane for the people, whiche of antiquitie, there first inhabited: But to satisfie that doubt, seemeth sufficient, the authoritie and opinion of the diuine Plato, who (in brief) maketh rehersal thereof, in his booke, intituled: Thimeum, otherwise called, the nature thinges: and afterwarde in another booke, or Dialogue, more at large, proceeding on forward, after his Thimeum called Atlanticum: where hee treateth of an Historye, which the Egiptians set forth in praise and commendation of the Athenienses, saying: that in times paste, they were of such power, that they ouercame and atchiued victory, against certayne Kinges, and an infinite number of men of warre, which came by Sea, from a great Iland, called Insula Atlantica, which had Origen at Hercules Pillers, and was accounted greater then al Asia, and Africa, wherin was contayned tenne Kingdomes, the which Neptunus deuided amonge his ten Sonnes: but to the eldest called Atlas, hee gaue the greatest Kingdome.

He also writeth of many other memorable thigs as also of the customes and ritches of this great Iland, but especially, of a famous temple, which was built in the principall Citie: the walles and roofes wherof, were wainscotted, with plate of golde, siluer, and latton, and other many particu-

larities, which are longe to rehearce, as originally may be seen, where they are written at large.

Many of whiche customes and ceremonies, at this day wee haue seen in Peru. From this Iland they sayle to other great Ilands, which stand on the farder side therof, nere adioynyng to the firm or continent lande, beyond the which, is the sea, called, the brode or true Sea. The formall words of Plato, in the beginninge of Thimeum, saythe: That Socrates speakyng to the Athenienses, sayd: it is holden for trouth, that your cittie in time past did resist an innumerable number of enemies, which came frō ỹ Sea, called Mare Athlanticum, who had taken and enioyed the most parte of all Europe and Asia: For at that time, that straycht was Nauigable: hauyng not far from ỹ mouthe an Iland, which began neare vnto the Pillers of Hercules, whiche was reported to bee greater then Asia, & Africa: and (ioyntly) from the same, was contractacion, in bying & sellyng with other Ilandes, which Ilands had conference with the fyrme and continent lande, which stoode in frent of them, who were neyghbours vnto the true sea.

For that Sea, with reason might be called the certayne and true Sea, and the lande, continent and fyrme: this mutche writeth Plato. He also affyrmeth, that .9000. yeares before the writyng hereof, the Sea enerealed with so mightie a power of water, in those parties, that in one day and one night, this great Iland suncke, and all the people perished, and that afterward, the same sea, remayned full of sandes and shallowes, so that thereby neuer after any mought passe vnto the

other

other Ilandes, nor fyrme lande.

All those which write vpon Plato, affirme and hold opinion, that this Hystorie was true, so that the most of them, especially, Marsilius, Ficinus, and Plantinus, wil not admit the meanyng to be Alegoricall, although many others iudge the contrarie, as the same Marsilius referreth vpon the annotations vpon Thimeum. But, where he speaketh of the. 9000. yeres, it seemeth not a fabulus argument: for accordynge to Eudoxus, those yeres were to be vnderstood accordynge to the Egiptians accompt, where euery monthe was accompted one whole yere, and not accordynge to ỹ course of the Sunne: so that. 9000. monthes, maketh. 750. yeres. Likewise it is almost a demonstration, to geue credit to the oppinion, touchyng this Iland, consydering that all the Historiagraphers, and Cosmographers that wrote of olde time, do cal the Sea, where ỹ Iland suncke, Mathanticum, reseruinge the name which it had when it was land: Than presupposyng that the Hystorie is true, who can deny that this Ilande Athlantica, began from the streight of Gibraltar, or not far from Cadiz, and extended into the greate gulfe, where as well North and South, as East and West, is a greater space then the scituation of all Asia and Africa.

The Ilands wherof the text maketh mencion seemeth to be Espaniola, Cuba, Iamaica, and the residew which stande in that Comarke.

The firme landes, whiche is sayd to stande in frent of the said Ilands: doth appere by reason, to be the same firme land, which now is called after

the same name, and al the other prouinces, wher vnto it is continent: which, beginnynge from the straight of Magalanez, doth contayne (runnyng Northward) the lande of Peru: the Prouince of Popayan, Castillia del oro, Beragua, Nicaragua, Guatimalla, Nueua Hispania, the seuen citties, Florida, Bacallaos: and the said lande, runneth along from thence Norward, vntill it come to ioygne almost with Norway: In the which (without doubt) is more grounde, then as yet throughout all the world is inhabited, or at least was knowen, before the discouery of this countrey. This matter doth not cause any great difficultie, that the Romaines and other nations, which in time past, inioyed the Land of Spayne, had not discouered this countrey: It is to be thought, ꝑ the roughnes of those Seas, in those dayes, did disturbe and hinder the Nauigation.

So that this Lande, may well bee called the firme and continent Land, wherof Plato writeth: which doth agree with all the tokens and signes, which hee giueth of the other: cheefely, wherin hee affirmeth, that it lyeth infrent of the South Sea. Then forasmuch as hath beene sayled in our daies, in the sayd South Sea, doth appere, that in respect of the bredth and greatnes of the sayde South Sea, all the Mediterraneum Sea, and as much as is knowen of the Ocean, vulgarly called, the Northen Sea, are Riuers in comparison of the other.

Then all this approued true, the signes, tokens and wordes of Plato, do therwith accord: so that

there

there is no doubt or difficultie in the first passage into Peru, of innumerable people, as well from the great Iland Atlantica, as also from other Ilandes, from which Ilandes they vsed to sayle: and also out of the firme Land, they might passe into Peru: And if in this pointe should seeme any difficultie, yet it is to bee credited, that by the South Sea, they had vse and knowledge of Nauigation, by contraction and traficke, which they had with this great Iland, where the text declareth, that they had great abundance of Shippes, yea, and Roades, and harbors, made by force of hande, for their conseruacion, where nature wanted.

This is as much as may be gathered, touching this matter, which is not small, for a thing of such antiquitie, without light: cheefely, that in all the Prouinces and Countrey of Peru, were founde no kinde of Letters or Writinge, to conserue the remembrance of things past, nor yet the pictures or paynting, which serued in the new Spayne, for Letters, sauing only, certayne stringes, of diuerse colours, full of knots: so that by those knots and distance betweene them, was an account kepte amonge that people, but maruailous strange to be vnderstood, as hereafter in this History shalbe declared. Therfore I may saye with Horatius:

Si quid nouicti restius istis, candidus imperti:
si non vis vtere mecum.

And as concerning the Discouery of this newe countrey, the wordes of Seneca doth fit, which he set out in his Medea Tragedy.

Venient

To the Reader.

Venient annis sæcula seris,
Quibus Oceanus vincula rerum
Laxet, nouosque typhis detegat orbes
Atque ingens pateat tellus
Nec sit terris vltima thyle.

Besides the oppinion of Plato, at this day are to be seene the Ilands of Asorez, Canarie, Madera and Ilandes of Cabo Verde: with wonderfull shallowes and Sande, lyinge farre out into the mayne Sea, which are thought to haue bin part of the sayd Iland Athlantica.

This Historye doth also set forth the dutie, and royall seruice, of the Subiect to his Prince, and how Mutynies are iustly punished: And likewise, last of all, how blood is punished with blood: and the highe waye to Honour, is great paine, and daunger of lyfe. And I for my parte (Gentle Reader) desire no more for my paynes, but that thou wilte as willingly accept my trauaile, as I with good will do offer the same.

Fare well.

THE HISTORY OF THE *Discouery and Conqueſt of the Prouince* of Peru, and of the warres and other notable thinges which there happened.

¶ Of the notice of *Peru*, and how the diſcouery was begon. Chap. 1.

IN the yeare of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt 1525. in the Cittie of Panama which ſtandeth ſcituated on the border of the South Sea, in the Prouince of firme Land, called Caſtillia del oro, dwelt three Gentilmen, among whom, was ſundrye times conference concerninge the vnderſtandinge which they had obtained of Peru, wherupon they agreede to proceed on the diſcouery of the ſame, and therupon laid all their goods into ſtocke of company.

The firſt and principalleſt of them was called *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, who was borne in a Cittie of Spayne called Trugillio: The ſeconde was named *Don Diego de Almagro*, natural of the Towne of Mallagon, whoſe ſtocke or lynage, could not vnto this day be perfealy knowen: yet ſome doth holde opinion, that hee was found at the Church dore in his ſwadling clothes, after that hee was newly borne: The third was a Prieſt called *Fernando de Luque*: And where theſe three were the richeſt and principalleſt men in that Countrey, they determined to encreaſe their ritches, & alſo to ſerue herein, his Maieſty the Emperour *Charles* the fifth: wherupon they concluded to take in hande, to diſcouer by the South Sea, the Eaſterly coaſt of the firme Lande, towarde thoſe places which afterward were named Peru: So that after they

had obtained licence of ỹ Gouernour, who at that instant then gouerned for his Maiesty, called *Pedro Arias de Auila*, *Don Francisco Pisarro* arriued, and rigged forth a Shippe, wherin hæ himself toke shipping as Captaine General, with 114. men in his company, and so proceeded on the Voyage, and in short space hæ discouered a smal and poore Prouince, fiftie Leagues distant from the Cittie of Panama, the which hee named Peru, and afterward called the whole Countrey of the same name, which was discouered for the space of 1200. Leagues: And proceeding forward hæ found another Land, which the Spanyards named the burnt Towne, where the Indians of that place held them cruell warre, and slew many of his men, so that he was forced to retire sore woũded, to the Countrey of Chinchama.

Euery league containeth 3. Englishe Miles.

In this meane season, *Don Diego de Almagro*, who aboad at home, had prepared another ship, and therin toke shipping with 70. Spanyardes, and with them proceeded to seeke *Don Francisco Pisarro*, sayling along the Coast til hæ came to the Riuer which hee named the Riuer of S. Ihon, which standeth 100. Leagues distant from Panama: And findinge him not, hee returned to the burnt Towne, and there had vnderstanding of his beeing there, where hee also came a shore, but the Indians encouraged with the victory and expulsion of *Don Francisco*, did likewise valyantly resist his entry, yea, and also put him and his company to the worse: in so much that they entred a Forte, where the Spanyards defended them selues through the ouersight of those which had the charge of that part of the Fortresse: by meane wherof, they put the Spanyardes to flight, and also with a stripe put out one of the eyes of *Don Diego*, by reason wherof they were forced to flee and to retire to the Sea side to take Shippinge agayne, and from thence sayled along the Coast of firme Land, vntill hee arriued at Chinchama, where he found *Don Francisco*, with whom after long communication, and refreshing of them-

themſelues, they gathered togeather about 200. Spa-
nyardes, and ſo proceeded againe vpon the diſcouery with
two Shippes and 3. Canoas, which were ſmall Veſſels,
built like vnto Troughes: In which Nauigacion, they
paſſed many and great troubles, by reaſon the Coaſte is
lowe, and full of Marriſh ground, and repleniſhed with
great Lizarts, which the Indians call Caymanes, and are
Beaſtes which breede in the mouthes of thoſe Riuers,
which are ſo great, that commonly they are of 20. yea, &
25 foote long: Their propertie is, aſwel, to refreſh them-
ſelues on the Land, as in the Water: but if any of them
can laye holde vpon Man or Beaſt in the Water, their
ſtrength is ſuch, that they carry thē vnder water, where
as they deuoure and conſume them: But chæfely they
ſmell a Dogge a farre off, and they laye their Egges on
the Land, a great number togeather, where they breede:
but among the Sandes they are ſlow of their creepinge:
after they haue hatched, they leade their Younge to the
Water: in the which their natural properties, they may
bee compared to the Crocodilles of Nilo: they alſo ſuffer
much honger, for their feedinge when they want meate,
is the fruite of a Tree called Maugle, wherof are many
in thoſe Riuers, which are of harde Timber, highe and
ſtraight in groweth, and grow in ſalte water, which is
not onely ſalte but alſo bitter. But the opinion is, that
thoſe Beaſtes vſe to eate of that Fruite, when other fee-
ding fayleth: they eate alſo Fiſh. In all this Coaſt, the
Grayne called Maiz groweth not.

Great Lizarts.

The Tree called Maugle.

In this ſorte they went rowinge with their Canoas a-
gainſt the currant of the Sea, which alwayes runneth
Northward, and their way was Southward: and in this
Nauigacion all along the Coaſte, the Indians aſſaulted
them according to the cuſtome of their Warres, thun-
dering out cryes and noyſe, callinge them baniſhed men,
with haire on their faces, yea, ſuch as were bred of ẏ ſcū
of the Sea, without any other Origen or Linage, becauſe

the Sea had brought them thither: demaunding also why they wente like Vacabondes wandringe the World: it should appeare saide they, that you are vile persons, and haue not wherin to imploy your selues, because you abide in no place, to labour and till the ground.

And wheras many of their men and Captaines were slaine by these Indians, aswel by hunger, as other wise, Don Diego determined to returne to Panama for mo men: the which his determinacion he performed, and had from thence 80 men, so that with them and the residew that remained aliue, they arriued at the Land called Carame, which was without the dominion of the Mauglares, and a Countrey aboundant of meate, but meanely inhabited: The Indians of ỹ Countrey, which were men of War, had their Chækes full of holes, wherin were placed Pearles of Golde: and findinge this place so fruitfull, they abode there vntill Don Diego de Almagro returned agayne to Panama for moze men: But in this meane while Don Francisco Pisarro returned, abiding the cõming of his companion, in a litle Iland which stode neare vnto the Mayne, called Insula de Gallo, wheras hee stood in næde of all thinges necessary.

How Don Francisco Pisarro abode in the Iland of Gorgona, and how with the small company of men, which hee had remayninge, hee sayled till hee passed the Equinoctiall. chap. 2.

When Don Diego de Almagro returned to Panama for succour, he found that his Maiestie had prouided for gouernment of the same Cittie, a Gentilman of Cordoua, called Pedro de los Rios, who staid his proceeding personally, because those which remained in the Iland of Gallo had sente secretly to this new Gouernour, to intreate that hee should not permit any moe men, to dy in that daungerous Iorney, without any:

any profit, wheras toſore others of their Nacion had ended their dayes, and that it might pleaſe him to cõmaund them alſo to returne. In conſideracion wherof, *Pedro de los Rios* ſente his Deputie with eſpeciall commaundement, that all ſuch as were willing, might ſafely retu: ne to Panama without daunger, and without diſturbinge of any that would force them to abide there.

And whan this newes and order taken, came to their knowledge, they forthwith toke Shippinge with great ioye, euen as though they had eſcaped out of captiuitie of Moares: ſo that only 12. men abode willingly with Don *Franciſco Piſarro*, with the which, bæing ſo few in number, hæ durſt not abide there, but went to an Iſlande vnhabited, ſituated fire Leagues, from the Mayne in the Sea: and becauſe this Iſland was repleniſhed with many faire Sprynges and brookes, hee named it Gorgona, wheras hee with his company maintained themſelues with Cockles, Crabbes, and great Snakes, which are there in aboundance: hee aboad there vntill his Shippe returned from Panama, which brought nothing but only Victuall, wherin hæ with his 12. men toke ſhipping, who were ſo conſtant and vertuous, that they only were the principall cauſe of the diſcouery of Peru, of whom one was called *Nicolas de Ribera*, naturall of Olbera: *Pedro de Candia*, borne in Greece, in the Iſland of Candia: *Ihon de torre*, *Alonſo briſenio*, borne in Benauent: *Chriſtopher de Peralta*, borne in Baeſa: *Alonſo de Trugillio*, borne in Trugillio: *Franciſco de Cuellar*, borne in the Towne of Cuellar: *Alonſo de Molina*, borne in the Cittie of Vbeda. Their chæfe Pilot, was named *Bartilmew Ruiz*, borne in the Towne of Moguex. This happy company ſayled with great perril and daunger, againſt the winde and currant vntill they arriued at a Prouince called Moſtripe, which ſtandeth betweene the Villages which the Chriſtians had inhabited: the one they named Truxillio, and the other S. Mighell, & there aboad a certaine time, for want

12. Men only remaine with Don Franciſco Piſarro.

The names of the firſt diſcoueiers.

of men, they durst not procéede beyond the River called Chira, and there prouided themselues of the Cattell of that Countrey, which were Shœpe, and also of Indian Interpretors, who willingly serued them. Notwithstanding bœing there well refreshed, embarked againe and sayled vnto the Porte of Lumbez, where they had intelligence of a princely House, which the Lord of Peru had in that place, and also a Towne of Indians which were exceeding ritch. This place was one of the most notablest things in Peru, vntill such time that the Indians of the Ilande Puna distroyed it, as hereafter shalbe declared: and there bee left thrœ fugitiue Spanyardes, who were slaine by the Indians, as at the length was knowen. So that with this intelligence they returned backe againe to Panama, hauinge beene thrœ yeares in the same Discouery, in great perrill, suffering many miseries, aswell by want of Victuals, as by the Warres and resistance of the Indians, and also mutiny amonge themselues, who were in dispaire the most of them, to finde any profitable thing: But yet the wisdome & gentle condicion of *Don Francisco Pisarro*, pacified their discorde with great courage, perswading them of the great hope which hée had in *Don Diego de Almagro*, for the prouision of Men, Victuals, Horses, and Armour: So that where those thrœ Gentilmen, the setters forwarde of this Voyage were the ritchest men in that partes, were now the poorest, and yet indetted in great summes of Money.

¶ How

¶ How *Don Franciſco Piſarro* came into Spayne, to giue knowledge to his Maieſtie, of the diſcouery of *Peru*, and of ſome of the Cuſtomes and properties of the naturals of the Countrey. Chap. 3.

THe Diſcouery bæing begun in the manner before declared, *Don Franciſco Piſarro* came into Spayne, and gaue intelligence to the Emperour his Maieſtie, of all ſuch thinges as had happened, beſæchinge his highnes in recompence and reward of his paynes, to graunt vnto him the gouernment of ſuch Countreyes as hereafter hee ſhould diſcouer and inhabit. The which his requeſt the Emperour graunted, vpon certaine condicions and Articles of agræment, drawen and engroſed accordinge as tofore his Maieſtie had done with other Captaynes, in affaires of Diſcouery. With this order taken, hee returned to Panama, takinge with him *Hernando Piſarro*, *Ihon Piſarro*, *Gonſalo Piſarro*, and *Franciſco Martin* of Alcantara, his Bretheren, among the which *Hernando Piſarro*, and *Ihon Piſarro* were onely legittimate Brethrē, of Father and Mother, Sonnes vnto *Gonſalo Piſarro*, the long Cittizen of Trugillio, who had ſometime bæne Captaine of Infautery in ỹ Kingdome of Nauarra: *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, and *Gonſalo Piſarro* were his naturall Children, but not by one Wife, & *Franciſco Martin* was his Sonne in Law. Beſides theſe afore named, hee carryed many others with him for the pretended diſcouery, but the moſt of them were of the Citties of Trugillio and Caſeres, and other Villages of the Prouince, called Eſtremadura.

In this ſorte with proſperous Nauigacion, he arriued and came to his deſired place of Panama, and there began to prouide the things neceſſary for the Diſcouery, in the name of the firſt companye: Although there was ſome diſorde betwæne *Don Franciſco* & *Don Diego de Almagro*, becauſe *Don Diego* receiued great vnkindneſſe that *Don*

Franciſco

Francisco had brought to passe his desire with the Emperour, and obtained the Title and name of Gouernour, and chæfe Discouerer of all the dominion of Peru, without any remembraunce made of him, nor yet of his seruice, although the sayd *Don Diego* had bæn one of the chæfest aduenturers, and also personally partaker of the paynes. But yet notwithstandinge *Don Francisco* perceauing by his countenaunce how the matter went, did comfort and perswade him, that the Emperour at that time when he was with his Maiestie, pleased not to take order for him, to remunerate his trauaile accordingly, although bee did in his behalfe require the same: but notwithstandinge hæ gaue vnto him for his parte, both his worde and promise, to renounce the Office & Title of chæfe Discouerer in him, and also would sende to the Emperour, to beseech his Maiestie to confirme the same. With which faire wordes, *Don Diego* was somewhat pacified: so that now wee will leaue from that matter, and speake of the Nauie, & other necessaries concerning the Discouery: and also declare the scituacion of the Prouince of Peru, and the notable thinges of that Countrey, with the customes of the People.

Of the people which inhabite vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne, and other notable thinges which are in that partes. Chap. 4.

THe Lande of Peru, wherof this Historie (God willing shall treate) did begin from the Equinoctiall forward vntill the Meridian, the people which inhabite vnder the Equinoctiall and neare there vnto, are in Phisnomie like Iewes, they pronounce their spæch in the throat like vnto Moriscos, they are inclined to the sin of Zodome: by reason wherof they are rigorous to their Wiues, and make small accompt of them: they weare no kinde of garment, sauing their

their priuie partes, which are couered: Their Women do plough and ſow the ground, they grinde their Graine, and therof make their proviſion of foode: their Corne is called in their Iſlande language Maiz, and in Peru it is called Zara. The men weare ſhort Shyrtes, which come to the Nauill, and their priuy partes are vncouered, they haue their heads ſhorne with a Crowne, like Friers, and the hinder and forepart of the heade is ſhaven, and the haire ſomewhat long on the ſides.

They delight much to weare Iewels of Golde in their eares and Noſtrilles, and alſo Emralds which are onely found in thoſe partes: But thoſe Indians would neuer diſcouer the Mynes or vaines of them, although it is certainly beléeued that there is their Origen, becauſe they finde in their earthen Veſſel many ſmall ſtones ſticking in the ſides.

They vſe about their legges and armes, Braſlets of Bedeſtones, of Golde, Plate, and Turkies, and ſmall Periwincles ſhelles, both white and red, and they permit not any kinde of brauery to their Women. This Countrey is exceéding hot, and apt to infirmitie, chéefely, a kinde of Pore which are very venemous, and breéd in the face, and other places of the body, roted déepe, which are (in manner) of worſe quality then the French Pore.

In this Prouince they haue their idolatrous Temples with their dores to the Eaſt warde, with Curtains of a clothe made of Cotten Woll: In euery Temple were two Images, made of the bigneſſe and likenes of blacke Goates, before the which, they vſed alwayes to burne a kinde of wood, of a maruailous ſwéet ſmell: The Trées of this odiferous wood growe in that Countrey, & by inciſion of the Barke they diſtill a maruailous ſwéete lycor, wherwith if any annoynt a dead bodye, the carkas corrupteth not. There are alſo in the Temples Images of the figure of great Serpents, which they adore & worſhip: beſides theſe Idols euery of thoſe people had a perticuler

Sweet Trees of a ſtraunge Balme.

ticuler God, according to his trade and office, which they also worshipped. The Fishermen had the Dogge Fishe called Tiburon, in great veneration, and the Raungers or Hunters had likewise their God, accordinge to ẏ game which they most estæmed: and in like manner euery sort of people accordingly. But in some Temples in the Villages called Pasao, they vsed to haue hanging on the Pillers of the Temple, the dead carkases of Men and Children sacrificed, or els their skinnes tanned in such order that the euill smel or sauour was taken away: Also their skulles were in suche manner placed, but first with a certayn coction, they were dressed, ẏ they were shrunken to the smalenesse of a mans fist, and than nayled on the saide Pillers, or Walles of the Temple.

The decking of the Idols temple.

This Countrey of his owne nature or property is dry, although there it raineth daily, there are few runninge Waters which are swæte, so that their chéefe drinke is of Welles, or of water preserued in Cesternes, which they call Aqueyes.

Golde.

Their Houses or buildings are of great Canes which there doth grow: the Golde which there is found is base, and of few Darets: there is also small quantity of fruit. Their Nauigation is with Canoas, made out of the bodyes of Træs, as is afore declared, and also vpon Rafftes of Timber: All the Sea coaste is full replenished with Fishe, and greate aboundance of Whales: In some Townes of this Prouince, called Caraque: they had vpon their Temple doores the Images or figures of men, cloathed like the vestment of a Deacon.

Of the vaynes of Pitche, which are at the cape called *Destahelena*, and of the Gyants which in time past inhabited there. Chap. 5.

NEare vnto this Prouince, is a poynt or cape of Land, which the Spanyardes named Destahelena, which lieth into the Sea, where are found certayne

certaine ſpringes of Pitche, or Tarre, and it ſerueth for the ſame purpoſe, for Ships: Not far from the ſaid Cape, the Indians of that countrey doth affirme, that ſomtime dwelt certaine Gyantes, who were of marualous great ſtature, in comparison to foure times the bigneſſe of a meane man of ſtature, but they knew not from whence their Origen was, yet their foode and maintenance was like vnto theirs, but only Fiſh was their principall food, becauſe their cheefe delight was in fiſhinge, and their Boates were raffes of Timber, which each of them vſed ſeuerally of their owne proper, becauſe theſe raffes were made of ſuch manner, that they could not well carry moe then one of thoſe Gyantes. Giants.

Their cheefe pleaſure was, when any had taken any greate Fiſh, becauſe thereby their ſtore was the better, for each of them would eaſely eate more then thirtie Indians: they vſed no kinde of cloathing, becauſe of the difficultie to make their Garmentes.

Theſe Gyants were exceedinge crewell, for without any cauſe they ſlew many of the poore Indians, by mean wherof they were much feared.

The Spanyards ſaw in the Porte called Puerto Viejo, two Images of thoſe Gyantes, the one of a man, and the other of a Woman: There is a certaine kinde of Cronicle, or remembrance among thoſe Indians, which was left vnto them by their fore Fathers, of ſundry particularities of thoſe Gyantes, eſpecially of their conſummation. They alſo held opinion how a younge man came downe from Heauen, ſhyning like the Sunne, & fought with thoſe Giants, throwing flames of fier at them with ſuche vehemency, that the tokens and ſignes therof remained in the hard ſtone, and as yet ſaid they, vntil this daye the ſame doth remaine: at which time they wente retyringe to a Valley, where hee made a finall ende of them. But notwithſtandinge theſe Indians tale, no perfect credit was giuen vnto the circumſtance therof,

vntil the Captaine *Ihon de Holmos* was appointed Lieutenant of the Gouernour, in the Port called Puerto Viejo, in Anno 1543. who beeinge informed of those antiquities, commaunded certaine of his men to digge in that Valley, where they found maruailous great Ribbes, and other bones, which if they had not ioyned with the skuls it would haue beene thought vncredible they should haue beene mennes bones: so that the matter beeing throughly examined, the Indians opinion concerning such Gyantes, was trew, and some of the Teethe found in those skulles, were sent to diuerse places of Peru: some of the sayde Teethe, which were there found, were of three fingers broad, & of foure fingers longe, which was reported by witnesse of sight, who were men of credit, of the Spanish Nacion. By records also, that sort of People were knowen to be offenders in the sin against Nature, called Zodomy, by reason wherof, the Iustice deuine, permitted them no longer to liue, but rather the Almighty sente his Angell to consume them, as in Zodom and other places.

Gyants teeth

Alwel in this point as all other antiquities, which is knowen and found in Peru, the only difficultie is to be presupposed which is in the verefying thereof, becaus that the Naturals of that Countrey knew neither wryting nor reading, nor yet certaine pictures which the Indians of new Spayne vsed in lue of bookes, so that their recordes or regesters did chiefly consist in memory from one to another: But their accompts or recknings of time, were made vpon a string or coard made of cottō woolle, which the Indians called Quippos, on the which they kept their reconing by making of knots on those coardes, with a difference ascending from one to ten, & so vpwards accordingly. And alwaies the coard was of the coloure of the thing which was ment to be signified, so that in euerye Prouince were Officers who had the charge to keepe the thinges in memorie with those

coardes.

coardes, which were called Quippo Camayos, ſo that many publique houſes were found full of thoſe coardes, and the ſaide officers could by them eaſily declare any matter concerning their effecte, although it had beene of many yeres paſt.

Of the people and things that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, towarde the Meridian, along the ſea Coaſt. cap. 6.

BEyonde the Equinoctiall line towarde the Meridian, ſtandeth an Iland 12. leagues diſtant from the towne of Boio, neere adioyning to the firme land. The which Iland is called Puna, and hath in it aboundance of ſundrie ſortes of beaſtes: and ſtore of deere, and much freſh fiſh in ſwete waters. In time paſt this Iland was repleniſhed with people, and maintained warres with all the townes about their frontiers: but principallye they were enemies to the inhabitants of Tumbez, which ſtandeth 12. leagues diſtant from them. They were lords of many Raffes, for their nauigation: theſe Raffes were made of long light poules, bound one vpon another, ſo that alwayes thoſe which were placed vppermoſt, were odde, as ordinarily, fiue, ſeuen, or nine, and the middle powle was longer then the reſt, as a Ruther to guyde the Raffe, and thereon ſate the rower, ſo that the raffe is made like an open hand, euen as one finger is longer then another: And on the toppe are plankes layde to kepe ſoldiers or paſſengers from wetting. Raffes.

There are Raffes that 50. men and 3. horſes may wel be carryed on them. They vſe for them as wel ſayles, as oares, the Indians are very good Marryners for ſuch kinde of veſſels, although it hath happened that when Spaniards haue ſailed on thoſe Raffes, the Indians ſubtlely haue vndone the ropes wherewith the timber was bound Indian deceipte.

bound together, and so ech peece sodenly to separate frō other: By meanes whereof many Christians haue perished, and the Indians saued them selues vpon the powles, without any other thing to succour them, by reason that they can swim exceeding well.

Their chiefe weapons for the warres were slinges, clubbes, and hatchets, made of siluer and copper. They had many speares or Iauelings, with the sharpe poynts of them made of base golde. Both the men and women vsed to were many iewels, and ringes of golde. Their ordinarie vessell was wrought and made of siluer and golde. The Lorde of that Iland was greatly feared among his people, hee was also exceeding ielious of his wiues, in so much that all those seruitours which attend vppon them had their noses cut of, and likewise their genitall members.

In another litle Iland adioyning to the same, they found a house and a gardeine plot or orchard within the same, hauing litle trees and plantes therein, made of siluer and gold. Ouer against this Iland in the firme land were certaine Townes, the which by displeasure taken by the Lord of Peru, he commaunded that aswell men as women should haue all their vpper teeth drawen out, of which toothlesse people vntil this day are some liuing.

A strange Orchard.

A sharpe punishment.

Proceeding forward beyond Tumbez toward the Meridian, for the space of 500 leagues along the coast, and ten leagues into the mayne, there neuer rayneth, thundreth, or falleth any lightning or thunderbolt: But passing the sayd ten leagues within the mayne land distant from the sea, it both rayneth and thundreth, & haue both winter and summer in their due seasons, & in the same maner as is in Spaine. But when it is winter in the mountaynes, then is it summer on the sea coast, and the like contrariwise. So that the length of that coast which is already discouered of the land of Peru, which taketh his beginning and is accompted from the citie of Pasto, vnto the Prouince of Chili, is one thousand eight hundred

A strange thing.

dred leagues, as large as the leagues of Caſtillia, and throughout the ſayd Countrey lieth a long mountayne or ridge of hilles very troubleſome to paſſe, which in ſome places doth ſtand diſtant from the ſea 15. yea, and 20. leagues, and in ſome places the braunches of that moũtaine approacheth nere the ſea brim. The length of peru 1800 Leagues.

So that all which as yet is diſcouered of Peru, is to be underſtand by two names, that is to ſay, all the ground betweene the mountaines and the ſea, is called plaines: and all the reſt is called mountaines. The plaines are drie and the moſt part ſands: for as before is declared, there it neuer rayneth, nor yet hath there bene founde any ſpring or fountaine, ſauing nere the ſea ſide are 4. or 5. aqueys or ceſterns, the water wherof is ſaltiſh. But the people doe prouide themſelues of water of the Riuers which deſcend out of the mountaines. The cauſe of thoſe riuers is the thawing of the ſnow and rayne which commeth from the ſayd hilles where very fewe naturall ſprinnges are found: Theſe riuers are diſtant one from another, ſome 10. and ſome 15. and 20. leagues: but the moſt ordinarie are of ſeuen and eight leagues: ſo that commonly the trauelers doo appointe their iorneys accordingly, to come vnto their freſh water. Some of theſe riuers are a league broade, and ſome leſſe, according to the diſpoſition of the ground. Along thoſe Riuer ſides are faire proſpectes of trees and fruites, & ground conuenient for the Indians to ſowe their corne called Maiz.

After the Spaniards began to inhabite this contrey, they ſowed wheate, all the ſaide plaine grounde they vſed to water with ſlewces, conueyed out of the Ryuers, in which arte they haue great experience, and induſtry: the beauty of thoſe Riuers, with Trees and fruites aforeſaid grow along the ſaid Riuers, euen from the Sea, vnto the Mountaines: thoſe Riuers comming from the hilles, diſcendinge with ſuch vehemency, that the Spa-

nyardes could not passe them on Horsebacke, especially the Riuer called Sancta, and many others: so that those which iorney in those Playnes, they keepe all along the Sea coaste, but in the Winter season it is daungerous trauailinge that coaste, by reason of the excedinge great currantes of those Riuers, that the waye is not wadeable on Horsebacke, but only on Raffes, or els with a bundell of Gourdes, which they vse to binde before their breasts and vnder their armes, and an Indian Pilot goeth before swimmyng to leade the way.

The grounde alonge these Riuers is excéding fruitefull, as wee haue declared: where Wheat & Maiz groweth in aboundance, without respecting any time of sowing

These Indians dwell not in houses, but their abidyng is vnder Trées, and shadowes made for the purpose. Their women were garments made of Cotton woll, like vnto gownes which come downe to their féete. The men were shirtes downe to the knées, and certein Mantels vpon the same, & although their attire is after one sorte, they differ in the attire of their heads, according to the vse of euery countrey: some vse their haire bounde vp with laces of woll, some with one lace, and other with many laces of sundry colours, so there is none but hath some deuice in his hed, and in euery Prouince of a seuerall kinde.

All the Indians of the Playnes are deuided into three sortes, the one are called Yngas, another sorte are called Tallanes, & the thirde Mochicas: in euery Prouince they differ in spéeche, notwithstandinge the noble men, called Cascikes, besides, their natural spéeche, do all generally vnderstande the language of the Cittie of Cusco, because the Kinge of Peru, called *Guaynacaua*, Father of King *Atabaliba*, thought it a base thinge ỳ his Subiectes, especially noble men should talke with him by interpreters, wherupon hee commaunded that all the Cascikes of his Countrey and dominions, and their Brethren and kinsemen

should

ſhould ſende their Children to ſerue and attende on the Kinge in his Court, vnder the colour to learne the courtly ſpæche: but chæfely the Kinges intente was to aſſure his countrey with the principall men of his Kingdome, in hauinge their children in pledge. But bee it as it will, by this meanes it came to paſſe, that all the Nobilitie of his Lande, vnderſtoode and could ſpeake the language vſed in Court, as in Flaunders the Gentilmen & others ſpeake the Frenche tongue: ſo that in concluſion, any Spanyarde that attained to the Cuſco ſpæch, mought wel paſſe throughout the dominions of Peru, aſwell in the Playnes as in the Mountaynes, to vnderſtand and to be vnderſtood among the chæfeſt.

Of the ordinary Windes which blow in the Plaines, and the cauſe of dryneſſe. Chap. 7.

VIth great reaſon, thoſe which reade this Hiſtory, may ſtande in doubt of the cauſe, why it rayneth not in the Playnes of Peru, as before is ſpecified, for by euident tokens, ſhould bee thought that thoſe thinges could not bee true, by reaſon of the growen Riuers which fal into the Sea, and commonly engender moyſture & vapors, comming out of the Mountaynes, hauing their beginning of the continuall Snow, which there abideth, wherof relation is made before, yea, and the ſayd Hilles neuer want clowdy weather, intermixed with rayne. The natural reaſō therof, found out by ſuch as diligently haue ſought the ſecret therof: which is, that in all thoſe Playnes, and Sea coaſt, all the whole yeare bloweth one only Winde, Note.
which the Mariners call Sluueſtre, which runneth alonge that coaſt with ſuch force, that the Cloudes and Vapors haue no reſt in thoſe playnes nor Sea coaſt, to come vnto the region of the ayer, and from the high Mountaines: The cloudes and vapors, do ſhew like another Heauen,

to those which are beneathe in the Playnes, and about them agayne, it is as cleare as Christall: and this onely winde also causeth the Seagate or Currant to runne alwaies Northward, although some men are of another opinion, which is, that where the South sea commeth to fall into the mouth of the straight of Magalanus, beeinge there so narrowe, and excedeth not the bredth of two Leagues, so that the greate power of the water can not there haue yssue, and also their encounteringe with the Northen Sea, which likewise disturbeth his passage: so that of force it maketh reflection and recoyle backeward, and so forceth the Currant toward the North. And here riseth another inconuenience, which is, ỳ the Nauigatiõ from Panama to Peru, is with such difficultie, because the winde is alwayes contrary, and also the most part of the yeare, ỳ Currant likewise, so that ỳ Saylers do sayle continually by the bowlinge against the fury of ỳ winde, or else it were not possible to sayle that Coast.

All along the coast of Peru are great number of fishe, and many Zeale fishes.

From the Riuer of Tumbez forward are found none of those great Lizartes of which we haue spoken. But some holde opinion the cause is, that the countrey forward is more temperate, and those beastes are louers of heate, but the most certaine reason is, because the Riuers thereabout are of a more swifter currant, and sufereth them not to breede, for their ordinaric breeding is in the calme places of Riuers.

Now at this day in all the length of the playnes are Villages and Townes of Christians, and fiue Cities, the first is called Puerto Viejo, which stãdeth very nere vnto the Equinoctiall. This Citie hath but fewe inhabitants because the countrey is poore and apt for diseases, yet there are some mines of Emraldes, as is before declared. Fifteene leagues with in the mayne is another citie called saint Mighel, which in the Indian speech they

Fiue Cities.

Puerto Viejo.

S. Mighell.

they call Pura: This is a pleaſant ſoyle and fruitefull, but no mines of golde nor plate. This place is apte for ſore eyes, and few or none that palleth that way eſcapeth that diſeaſe.

Threeſcore leagues forward along the coaſt ſtandeth another citie in a valley called Trugillio, and is diſtant from the ſea, two leagues. The porte or harbor belonging to this citie is perillous. This citie is placed in a plaine plot, neere vnto a Riuer ſide, and is aboundantly prouided of wheate, Maiz, and cattell. It is alſo exceeding wel built, there are in this citie aboue three hundred houſholds of Spaniards. Trugillio.

Foure ſcore Leagues forward, ſtandeth another Cittie, two Leagues diſtant from a Porte of the Sea, which is an excellent good Roade for Shippes, it is ſcituated in a Valley called Lyma, and named the Cittie of the Kings, becauſe the day of Epiphany it was begun to inhabite, it is placed in a plaine ground, neare vnto a mighty Riuer: The Countrey there about is plentifull of Corne, & many ſortes of fruites and cattell: the building of this Cittie is ſuch, that all the ſtreates doo meete in a faire large place, from the which a man may ſee through euery ſtreat into the Fieldes: the dwelling is maruailous healthfull, becauſe it ſtandeth in a temperate Climat, and not vexed throughout the yeare with neither heate nor colde, extreamely. The hoateſt ſeaſon of the yeare is more temperate then in Spayne: for in the time of their heate in Lyma, which is in Sōmer, there falleth euery morninge a ſweete Dew, which is nothing hurtful to mans health, but rather profitable, for ſuch as haue the head ache vſe to waſh their heads with the Dewe water, and therwith finde great eaſe. The Cittie called Reis, in the Prouince of Lyma.

All Spaniſh fruit groweth and proſpereth wel in this Soyle, eſpecially Orenges, Sidrons, Lemons, Figges, Polwngarnardes and Vines, wherof had beene there aboundance, if the alterations in the Land had not diſtur-

ued their plantinge, for experience hath shewed that the very Kernell of the Grape hath perduced faire Vynes: There groweth also greate store of Pot earbes, such as ordinarily grow in Spayne: euery house hath belonging vnto it a litle runninge water, or Broke, brought in by conueyance of slewce, which water is sufficient to driue a mill, although along the Riuer side they haue their common milles where the Spaniards grinde their corne.

This citie is iudged the most pleasant dwelling in all the land, because the porte and roade for shippes maketh the Citie to be of great contractation for Marchãts: So that the people of all Cities, Townes, and Villages, within the maine lande vse to come thither for their prouision and furniture.

From the mines of this Prouince is brought greate aboundance of golde and siluer. The scituation is in the middest of the land, as yet discouered, by reason whereof the Emperour his Maiestie placed there a chauncery royall, and Iudges to decide his subiectes causes, which also causeth the greater resorte of people. It is thought that in processe of time this Citie will increase to be of maruelous fame and greatnes. At this day there are aboue fiue hundred housholds of Spaniards, and enery house hath a greater compasse of ground then the houses built in Spayne: so ỹ these 500. houses seeme bigger then 1500. in Castillia, by reason that the streetes are broad, and hath also a place of great compasse in the middest of the citie, ech house hath in the fronte 800. foote, & twise as much large. Their buylding is but for one storie high, for want of timber to builde a height, and yet that timber within three yeres beginneth to rotte and consume, yet notwithstanding the low building, the houses are sumptuous and of great Maiestie. The walles are of fiue foote broade, & the plot whereon the houses stand, are rayled of like height with earth, by reason whereof, the houses seeme of reasonable height. The Rookes of

those

thoſe houſes are made of rafters layde croſſewiſe, and vpon the Timber is layde for ſæling gallante paynted mattes, like vnto thoſe which are made in Almeria, in the kingdome of Granada, and vpon that ſæling are layd boughes, ſo that the lodgings are high, freſh, & not troubled with the ſunne: and as for the water, they nede not to care: for as before is declared, it neuer rayneth in thoſe plaines.

Thirty Leagues from this Cittie along the Coaſt, is another Cittie, intituled the faire Towne of Aroquipa; which hath in it 300. houſes of Spanyardes: this alſo is a healthfull ſoyle, and aboundant of all kinde of victuall, but it ſtandeth 12. Leagues from the Sea coaſt, by mean wherof it is thought that the Towne will encreaſe with inhabitantes, for the Riuer by which it ſtandeth, is ſo good and faire, that Shippes laden with Marchandize may come vp the riuer, euen to the Cittie: and frō this place the Cittie of Cuſco is ſerued of all things nedefull, and likewiſe the Prouince of Charcas, from which places commeth the moſt people of that Countrey, by reaſon of the contractation of the Mynes of Potoſi: Alſo great quantitie of Plate is brought thither, to be laden in the Shippes backe againe in returne to the Cittie of the Kinges, or Panama, which is a great helpe, for to auoyde the carriage by land, beinge very daungerous and troubleſome in the highe wayes, ſince the time that the new Orders or Lawes ſet forth by the Emperour, were executed. Aroquipa.

From this Cittie, men may trauaile forward alonge the Sea coaſte, for the ſpace of 400. Leagues, vnto the Prouince that the Gouernour *Pedro de Valdiuia* did diſcouer and inhabite, called Chili, which is as much as to ſay in the Indian tongue, Colde, by reaſon of the extreame colde, which the trauellers paſſe in the waye thither, as in this Hiſtory ſhalbe declared hereafter, when the iorney made by the cheefe Diſcouerer *Don Diego de Almagro* Chili.

shalbe spoken of: so that now is vnderstood the scituacion and habitacion of the parte of Peru, and the Playnes therof, wherwithall is likewise to bee considered, that the Sea coaste is cleane, and without daunger of Rocks, as far as hither vnto hath bene discouered, nor yet any furious or tempestuous weather doth vexe that coaste of the South Sea, and therfore it may well bee called, the quiet and Golden Sea, yea, and moreouer, anye shippe along that coast may with one Ankor ride in safety, without daunger of any winde.

Of the qualities and nature of the Mountaynes of Peru, and of the habitacions and dwellinges of Christians and Indyans. Chap. 8.

THe Indians which dwel in the Mountains doo differ much from those which dwell in ỹ Plaines, or low-countrey, both in strẽgth, knowledge, and liuinge: for in the Mountaynes, their dwelling is in houses couered with earth, their shirtes and garmentes are wrought of sheepes woll, which there do breed: they weare nothing on their head, but haue their haire laced with a stringe. The Wemen weare garments without sleeues, gyrded with woollen gyrdels, which maketh them long wasted: they also weare certayn Mantels ouer their heds, which are pinned about their neckes, with pinnes of Golde or Plate, accordinge to the habilitie of euery one: those pinnes are called in their language Topos, because the heads are great, plaine, and flat, and the sides and points exceedinge sharpe: These Wiues doo helpe their Husbandes in the labour & tillage of the ground, nay I may say, that their paines is greatest in all seruice. These Wemen of complexion are white, and well fauoured, exceeding much, the wemen of the Plaines: and so likewise the countrey doth much differ, the one from the other,

Indian pins.

ther, becauſe the Mountaynes doth bring forth great abundance of Graſſe, & hath much freſh water, of which, and from which, the Riuers proceedes, which runneth downe into the Playnes: there are alſo many kinde of Flowers and pleaſant greene plottes, with ſundry kinde of Earbes, and ſundry ſortes of Trees, of maruailous fruites, ſo pleaſaunt in taſte, that in all Spayne there is no better: there are alſo wilde Walnut trees, and Willowes: theſe Indians haue many wilde Sheepe, and others very tame and domeſtical: they haue alſo Deare, and ſundry other kinde of Beaſtes, and great number of Foxes: The Indians are great Hunters, and call the game Chico, but when they are diſpoſed to make a generall feaſt of huntinge, they ioyne togeather foure or fiue hundred Indians, and place themſelues one by one in the compaſſe of the ground which they meane to hunte, which oftentimes is two or three Leagues in circuite, and then they come incloſing foote by foote, by the ſound of certaine ſonges, which they vſe to ſinge for that purpoſe, ſo that at the end they ioine altogeather in a round, and take each other hand in hand, & ſome arme in arme, ſo that they bring in among them a great number of ſilueſter Beaſtes, euen as though they were penned in a Pownd, and than they kil and make their choice at their pleaſure: but the excedinge ſhowtes, and hallowinge which they make, doth not only feare the wilde Beaſts, but alſo oftentimes with the ſame noyſe they amaze the Partriges, and other Foule, that eaſely they may be taken by hand. Hunting.

There are alſo in the Mountaynes, Lyons, and great blacke Beares, wilde Cattes, and Apes of diuerſe ſorts, and many other kinde of wilde Beaſtes, vnknowen to our Nation: The Foule which moſt frequent ẏ plaines and Mountaines, are Eagles, Doues, & Turtle Doues, Quailes, Parats, Hawkes, white & ruſſet, Nightingals, and diuerſe other ſortes of faire & gallant Foule: alonge Foule.

the Sea coast are Buytres, that hauinge their whinges, spred, contayne .15. and .16. palmes or spannes from the point of whinge to whinge: these Buytres fede vpon Seales when they come on Lande, to slepe and refresh them selues, than come the Buytres, and season some on the face, and some on the tayle, and lay such holde on him, that hee cannot stirre whilest other plucke out his eyes, and then they fede on the carkas: there is another sort of foule called Alcatraces, which are like vnto Hens, although much exceeding in greatnes, for his throat will holde three gallons of corne, & of those all along the coast of the South Sea are aboundance, at the leaste for the space of two thousand leagues and more, the chiefe feeding of these foules are fish. They haue also another marueylous propertie, which is: They will smell the carkas of a dead man a farre of, so that they wil enter thirty and forty leagues into the land to seeke the dead bodies. The flesh of these foules are of a marueylous euil smell, and hath happened that some for want of foode haue eaten of them, whereof they haue dyed, as of a rancke poyson.

Here before is declared, how in these mountaines there rayneth, hayleth, and snoweth, and in fine, extreme in colde, yet notwithstanding from those high hilles are valleyes descending so deepe, that it may be thought incredible to some to speake thereof. In which valleys, the heate also is marueylous, and there groweth a certeine herbe called Coca, which the Indians doe esteeme more then golde or siluer: the leaues whereof are like vnto Zumake, the vertue of this herbe knowen by experiẽce, is, that any hauing of those leaues in his mouth, hath neuer hunger nor thirst. Coca.

In some places of those mountaines are no trees at all, so that wayfaring men which passe that way vse to make their fire of turues, which they finde exceeding good for that purpose.

There are also mynes of earth of sundrie coloures,

and

and vaynes of golde and Plate: wherof the Indians had vnderſtandinge and coulde melte the ſame better, and with leſſe coſte than the Chriſtians: they alſo vſed in the high hilles to make litle Fornaces, with their mouthes toward the Meridian, wheras the winde moſt ordinary doth blow, and then they lay in the ſame Fornaces the mettal, with Sheepes doung, & coales, ſo that the winde doth kindle the fier, and the mettal melteth and cindreth the Golde and Siluer, and yet vnto this day is ſeene the great aboundance of Siluer, which in this ſort is molten in the Mynes of Potoſi, which coulde not otherwiſe bee wrought with Bellowes: ſo ỹ the Indians are the chefe melters with their ſmall furnaces, which they cal Guayras, in their Language, and is as much as to ſaye, as winde, becauſe the winde doth kindle their Fornaces.

This countrey is ſo fruitful, that it yeldeth for one buſhell of Wheate ſowen, 150. yea, and ſometime 200. and an hundred for one is ordenary, although they haue no Ploughes to till the ground, but vſe to turne it vp with ſhouels, and ſo the Indians vſe to ſow: and likewiſe they make holes in the ground with a woodden Pin, and put therin Wheat, in ſuch ſorte as they vſe to ſet Beanes in Spayne. All kinde of Gardaine carbes, proſpereth exceedingly: the Indians foode is chefely boyled Maiz, and toaſted, in lue of bread, and Deare fleſh dried, & alſo drye fiſhe, and ſundry kindes of Rootes, which they call Iuca, and Axis, Amotes, Papas, and ſuch like, with many kinde of carbes: They alſo vſe a certaine kinde of Beuerege in ſtead of Wine, which they make of Maiz, & the manner is, they lay their Maiz in water, in certaine earthen Veſſels, which they keepe vnder earth, and there it boyleth, and beſides the whole Maiz, they put therunto a certaine quantity of ground Maiz, the which one Neighbour lendeth to another, as wee vſe to lende Leuen for Bread.

They hold opinion, ỹ the ſtanding water maketh better

and more stronger beuerege, than the running water: This drinke is commonly called Chicha in the Iland Language, and in the Peru speche it is called Acisa: of this drinke there is both white and red, according to the colour of ỹ graine wherof it is made. But it is of greater force then any Wine, to ouercome the braine, & to make drunkardes: but yet notwithstandinge if the Indians may haue Spanish Wine, they would not care for their owne naturall drinke. They vse also another sorte of drinke, made of a small fruite which grow vpon certaine Trees called Molles: this drinke is not so precious as the Chicha.

¶ Of the Cities of Christians which are in the Mountaines of *Peru*. chap. 9.

In the Mountaines of Peru, are sundry places of habitacion of Christians, which begin at the Cittie of Quito, which standeth foure degrees beyond the Equinoctiall: this Cittie in times past was a pleasante thinge, and plentifull of corne and cattell, and in the yeare of 1544. and 45. there was discouered riche Mynes of Gold, wherupō the Cittie began to inlarge his bowndes with inhabitants, and flourished vntill the fury of the cruell warres among the Spanyardes begon, which was the cause that the most parte of all the Cittizens were slayne by the handes of *Gonsalo Pizarro* and his Captaines, because they did both fauour & serue the Vize-roy *Blasco Nunez Vela* all the time that he there abode, as hereafter particularly shalbe declared: From this Cittie is no poblation of Christians, in the Mountaines, vntill you come to the Prouince of the Bracamoros, which was discouered by Captaine *Ihon Porsell*, and Captaine *Vergara*, who built there certaine Villages, to the intent that from thence they ment to discouer forwardes: But these Villages came to ruine, be-

Quito.

cause

cause *Gonsalo Pisarro* toke those Captaines and their men to ayde him in his Warres. This Discouery was first taken in hande by the order and consent of the lycenciat *Vaca de Castro*, who was gouernour of that Prouince, and sent Captayne *Porsell* by the coast of Saint Mighell, and farther vp into the Mayne, hee sent *Vergara*, by the Prouince of the Chachapoyas, thinking that they should haue made their entries by seuerall places, although it so happened that both the sayd Captaynes met in their iorney, and fell to discorde about their Discouery, concerning to which of them it should appertaine, so that they were both sente for, by the Gouernour *Vaca de Castro* to pacifie and take order in the causes of their contencion, so that they were of the first Captaynes, that were at the beginninge of the Warres, in the Cittie of the Kinges, in the seruice of the Vice-roy: and after that the sayd Vice-roy was taken prisoner, they abode with *Gonsalo Pisarro*, and left of their procéding in the Discouery.

This disconery reached 160. leagues from the Cittie of Quico, along the mountaines, so that other 80. leagues forward standeth the Prouince called Chicapoyas, where is a Towne of Christians, intituled Leuanto, and is a fruitfull soyle for all kinde of victuall, and hath also reasonable rich Mines. It is wel fortified by reason that it standeth high, and is compassed with a marueylous deepe valley, wherein is a Riuer that runneth almost in circuite of the hill where the Towne standeth. Chichapoya. Leuanto.

The Marshall *Alonso* de Aluarado, was the first that did inhabite this Prouince, vnto whom it was commended. Beyond this prouince about 60. leagues, standeth another Towne of Christians called *Guanuco*, which was buylt by the commaundement of the Licenciat *Vaca de Castro*, who named it Leon, because hee him selfe was borne in the citie of Leon in Spayne. This towne is well prouided of victuals, and is thought to be abounda͂t of Mines, especially towarde that parte, which Prince Guanuco. Leon.

Inga holdeth, & people wherof were occupied in warres in the Prouince called Andes, as hereafter shal be declared. So that beyond this place there is not in the Mountaine any village of Christians vntil you come to Guamanga, which was named Saint Ihon de Victoria, & standeth distant from Guanuco sixtie leagues.

This village is but meanly inhabited of Christiãs, but it is thought that it wil be better, if the Prince Inga cease from his warres, who hath vsurped a great part of the best ground thereunto belonging, and specially where the best Vines are, and greatest quantitie of the rich herbe called Coca. From this Towne of Guamanga, vnto the citie of Cusco, is distance 80. leagues: In the which are many plots of Rocky and troublesome way to passe, which causeth great perill vnto ỳ wayfaring men. The citie of Cusco before the Christians comming thyther, was the chiefest seat & court of the Indian kings of all the whole Prouince, so that from that princely citie was gouerned and ruled all those countreis and Prouinces here before declared, and hereafter shalbe declared. To this citie al the Caseikes or noble men resorted from all places of the Empire to bring their tributes appertaining to the Prince, as also to deale about particular affayres, and to demaund iustice in their suites one with another.

In all the whole dominions of that countrey, there was not any place of habitacion that had the Maiestie or manner of a cittie, but onely Cusco, where was a fayre Fortresse, wrought of square stones, which were so huge and great, that it was a wonder how they were brought thither, by Indian strength of men, without helpe of Oxen, Muyles, or other Beastes: and yet there are some one stone, that tenne yoake of Oxen could not with their strength moone them from the place from whence they were brought: and the houses wherin the christians dwell in at this day, are the very same that the Indians made

made for their owne dwellinge: so that some of those houses are repaired, and other increased of the same fashion. The cittie was deuided into foure partes, in such order, that all such as came thither to dwel or to lodge in, Kinge *Inga* commaunded that they should lodge or inhabite in the streat which lay toward the place frō whence they came. Those which came from the South parte were called Collasmo, by the name of a Towne called Collao: and hæ which came from the North, was called Chinchasuyo, by reason of a Prouince which lay that way called Chincha, which is now appertaininge to the Emperour, and is vnhabited and nothing worth: and in this manner they name accordingly the other two partes which lyeth East, and West, Andesuyo and Condesuyo, so ỹ no Indian might dwell or lodge in any other streat, but only in that streat which lay towarde the place from whence hæ came, vpon a great penalty.

All the countrey neare adioyning to the cittie, is exceeding plentifull of all kinde of victuals, and exceedinge healthfull, for it is approued that any sound man of body that commeth into this countrey, doth long continue in health. It is inuironed with many ritch Mines of golde, out of the which hath bene gathered the infinite summe, which vntill this day hath beene brought into Spayne, although now since the discouery of the Mines of Potosi, they leaue the gold mines, and worke in those siluer Mines, because therein they finde a greater gaine then in the golde workes, and also is gotten with lesse danger both of Indians and christians, which deale in those affaires.

From the cittie of Cusco to the Towne called Villa de Placa, which stãdeth in the Prouince of Charcas, are 150. leagues and more, and in the midway standeth a great prouince in the plaine called Collao, which is about fiftie leagues long. The principall part thereof is called Chiquito, which now appertaineth to his Maiestie. And be-

Villa de plaã ta.

ing so great a peece of ground vnhabited of christians, the Licenciat *Dela Gasca* in Anno .45. commaunded to buylt a village in the prouince of Collao.

This town called Villa de Plata, is a place of extreme colde, & none like vnto it in al the mountaines, by meane of which colde there are few dwellers, but those which abide there are marueilous ritch, and those few inhabitants of this towne abide the most parte of the yere in the mines which are in the circuite of Porco and Potosi, as hereafter shalbe declared.

From Villa de Plata entringe inwarde to the maine on the left hand Eastward was discouered by commaundement of the Licenciat *Vaca de Castro*, who sent for that purpose captaine *Diego de Rojas*, and *Philip Gutierez* to the Prouince which now is called by the name of Diego de Rojas, and is reported to be a good and holesome countrey, aboundant of al necessary victuall, howbeit the treasure of Mines expected, was not there found, for which consideration captaine *Domingo de Italia*, and his companions came into Peru, in anno 49. so that in conclusion, they trauailed all the Lande that is between the South Sea, and the Northe Sea, at the time when they wente vp the Ryuer of Plate, in discouery of the Northen coast.

This is the scituation of all the Lande discouered, & inhabited throughout the Prouince of Peru, toward the South Sea, presupposing the Discouery along ỳ South coast, without entry into the Mayne, because in the discouery of the Mayne, the certaintie is not yet knowen, by reason of the troublesome and perrilous wayes, that leadeth ỳ course both with colde, double cragged Hilles, destitute of victuals, and al comfort for man: yet neuertheless the Spanyardes would not haue feared these great perrils, if they had not doubted the gayne of treasure, which they thought was not to bee had in that proceedinge.

Spanyards.

Of

Of the opinion which the Indians had concerning their creation and other thinges. chap. 10.

WHere as the Indians had no kinde of writing, as before is declared, they knew not the Origen of their creation, nor yet the ende which the Worlde had, at the time of Noes Fludde. But accordinge to the iudgemente and herelay of their Auncestors from time to time.

These people holde opinion, that out of the partes of Septentrion, came a man that had neither bone nor ioynt and when hee went any whither, hee both shortned and also enlarged the way, accordinge to his owne will: hee also, said they, set vp some hilles and threw downe others and this was he, said they, that first created the Indians, but this Creator with a displeasure that hee tooke with his People of the Playnes, conuerted their countrey into Sande, and commaunded that it should neuer Rayne in those Playnes: Yet in the mittigation of his wrath, hee sente them out of the Mountaynes, the Riuers to comfort them. This their God, was called among them *Con*, who was accordinge to their opinion, the childe of the Sunne and the Moone, and this *Con* was holde for their God, whom they honoured and worshipped: and it was hee, said they, that did maintayne them with earbes and siluester fruites. But afterward out of the South, came a great God, called *Pachacama*, who propperly was called Creator, who also was the childe of the Sunne and Moone, but after his comming their God *Con* vanished away, and left his people without a Captayne, by meane whereof *Pachacama* conuerted thē into Foule, Apes, Cats, Beares, Lyons, Parrattes, and sundrye other kinde of Foules, which now abound in that countrey, and hee it was, say they, that created the Indians which are at this day, and gaue them industry to plough the ground, and to plant Trees: hee was onely holden for God, and all the

principall men which deceased in that countrey, were caryed to be buryed in the Prouince which is called Pachancama, after his name. In which Prouince his chæfe abyding was, and standeth foure leagues from the city of ỹ Kinges. This God Pachacama abode among thē till the comming of the Christians into Peru, and after their comming he neuer more appeared, wherupon it is thought that it was some deuil which made them beleue all those vanities.

These Indians hold opinion that there was in time past an vniuersall flood, at which time their auncesters escaped in canes, which they had buylt for that purpose in the highe hilles, where, and before the flood they had layde in theyr prouision of victualles: And when they

they went into thoſe caues they dammed vp the little doores wherat they entred, to defend them from the water. And when they vnderſtoode that the water vaniſhed away, they firſt put out their dogs, and when they returned vnwet, then were they ſure that the flood was paſt, and then came they out of their caues. Alſo they ſay that with the moyſture which remayned of the flood, came the ſnakes to breede, which did greatly annoy thē, howbeit in proces of time they were deſtroyed.

Alſo, it is moſt true, that they had intelligence of the generall flood, but they knew not that Noe did eſcape in the Arke, with ſeuē perſons, which did againe repleniſh the worlde: but they imagined that they eſcaped in the Caues, as before is declared: but yet their flood mought be particuler, as was the flood of Deucalion.

They beleeue alſo, that the world ſhall haue an ende, but before the end (ſay they) ſhall come a great drought, and ſhall not rayne in many yeares: and to prouide for that time of neceſſitie, the Noble men had great large houſes built, to keepe their Graine in ſtore, againſt the time of drought. When the Sun or Mone is eclipſed, then they make a terrible cry, with feare, thinking that the laſt day is comen, and that all ſhall periſhe: they beleeue aſſuredly, that the Sun & the Mone ſhall loſe their light, euen as when either of them is eclipſed.

Of the Rites and Sacrifices of the Indians, vſed among them in *Peru*. Chap. 11.

THis people adore and worſhip the Sun and the Mone for Gods, and the earth for their Mother: in ſtead of ỹ ſun, they haue in their Temples certaine ſtones, which they worſhip, and are called Guacas, which is the name of mourninge and weepinge, and euen ſo they weepe when they enter into their Temples, they preſume not to come neare their Guacas or Idolles, but onely ſuch as are Miniſters, appointed for that ſeruice,

and those priests or ministers ware white garments, & when they make intercession to those Idols, then take they certain white clothes in their hands, & prostrating themselues on the ground, they make their supplicatiõs to the idols in such a language, that ỹ other Indians vnderstand not. These priests also receaued such offerings as was offered to the idols, & buried the same in the temple, for the offrings were alwaies either gold or siluer, or images made like vnto the thing which ech person most desired. Those priests vsed to sacrifice both men & cattel, but in the harts & lights of men, after they are taken out of the bodies, they behold and marke certain signes & tokens, and the like of beasts, and vntil they finde the signe which they seke for, they cease not to kil both man & beast, for (say they) vntill we finde the signes that we loke for, our gods are not pleased wt our sacrifice. Those priestes did seldome go abroad into the town, nor yet lie with any woman in the time of sacrifice, and al the night long they ceased not crying out with loud voyces, inuocating ỹ deuils in the fields whoras this Guacas were, of which ther was many, for vnto euery Indians house appertained a Guaca. But when they should talke wt the deuil, they first fast, & sow vp their eye lids, yea, & some breake their eies because they are exceeding deuout in their wicked, horrible, & blinde religion. Their Caseikes or noble men, doe take nothing in hand without they first consult with the idol priests, or speking more plainly, with the deuil. The Spaniards found in many of those temples of the Sun, certain great earthen vessels, ful of dried children, which had beene sacrificed. And among those, peces of siluer & gold, which were found among those Guacas, were also found cros staues, and miters, naturally like vnto those which bishops vse, and some images had the like miters on their heads. When father *Thomas de Verlango*, bishop de tierra firme, came into Peru, & there hauinge his Miter on his head, at deuine seruice, ỹ Indians thought verily that he was a Guaca, and demaunded if he were ỹ Guaca

of the Chriſtians. They did alſo many times enquire to what purpoſe they vſed the miter, but they could yeld no reaſon for it, ſauing that it was an ornamẽt of great antiquitie. Beſide this Guacas throughout Peru were many houſes or monaſteries, wherin a great number of wemẽ were dedicated to the Sun. Theſe wemẽ after they were once entred into thoſe houſes, they neuer came forth againe, but there cõtinued ſpinning & weauing very good cloth of cotton wool, & ſhæpes wool. And when their cloth was wrought and finiſhed, they burned the ſame with ẏ bones of white ſheepe, and then tooke the aſhes & threw them into the aire toward the Sun. Theſe wemen liued chaſte: but if by hap any offended againſt chaſtitie, they ſlew her for her labour: but contrariwiſe if any chaunced to be with child, thẽ ſhe was put to her purgation by oth, & if ſhe ſware that ſhe was gotten with child by the Sun, then was ſhe pardoned of death. At the time of harueſt when the Indians gathered in their corne called Maiz, they vſed yerely to make a ſolemne feaſt, and in ẏ faireſt place of the towne they pitch into the ground two maſts like cõmerpoles, vpon the top of each they placed ẏ image of a man, and the middle of the poales are trimmed with flowers: Then come they in foure ſeueral companies wt their drummes, and by the ſound of their drummes they come alſo making a great noyſe, each company throwing their wands at the images, and after they haue ſo done, then cõmeth the prieſt bringing an idol, which they place at the foote of the poales, before whõ they ſacrifice either a man or a ſheepe, and with the bloud of either of them, they annoynt the Idole. This done they take the hart & lights to ſearch for their accuſtomed ſignes & tokens. And then they ſignifie therby vnto the people what ſhal happen, vpon which newes, the feaſte is either pleaſant or ſad, and all that day they ſpend in daunſing and drinking, and in other paſtimes which they vſe with inſtruments of muſick according to their maner wt their weapons in their hands, which are hatchets, & clubs, and ſuch like.

Cloyſter wemen.

The opinion which these Indians holde concerninge the resurrection. Chap. 12.

THe Caseikes of Peru, & al the principall persons in the Land, they do vse to bury in vaultes, sitting in chaires, and haue vpon them and about them, all their ritch clothing: they were wont to burie also with them one or two of their wiues, which were best beloued. It hath happened about this poinct, sometime the wiues to go to law, to approue which was best beloued, and to auoide that discord, the husband doth leaue determined before his death, who was his best beloued: they also buried aliue with him two or three boyes or Pages of seruice: they layd also into the graue al his vessell of Golde and Siluer. The effecte and meaninge hereof was, that they beleeued to rise againe in another worlds, and therfore they would not then be to seeke for such furniture or seruice. So than when the Spanyards came to breake vp those Sepulchres, for the gold & plate that was in them, the Indians besought them that they would not scatter ỹ bones, because (said they) their bones beeinge togeather, they shall more easely, and with lesse paine rise againe. The obsequies which their kinsfolke make for them is in this sort, from the top of the Graue there goeth a pipe made of Cane, that reacheth down into the mouth of the dead, wherunto the kinsefolke do oftē put into the drinke or beuaredge, called Chicha: they also make vpon their Graues the Image of the ded, made of wood, and other cōmon folke hath the signe of their occupacion made vpō their graues, but the Souldier or man of War, hath a remēbrance according to his valiantnes.

Of the Origen of the Kings of *Peru*, called *Ingas*. Chap. 13.

IN all the Prouinces of Peru, were principall persons, called in the Indian tongue Curacas, which is as much to saye, as Caseikes, in the Iland speeche, because the Spanyardes which came

came to conquer in Peru, had learned theſe names in the Iland of Santo Domingo, Cuba, Sainct Ihon, and in *Tierra firme*, where they had dwelt, ſo that at their firſt cõming thyther, they vnderſtood not the proper names of things in the Peru ſpeach, by meane wherof the Indians themſelues at this day vſe to name thoſe things according to the Spanyards termes of ſpæch, and therfore they leaue from callinge their noble men Curaca, and call them Caſcikes, and the corne or graine which they were wont to call Sara, they called Maiz, and the drinke which they called Aſua, they now call Cicha.

Theſe noble men did maintaine their vaſſals in peace and quietnes, & in time of war they were their captains: In this ſorte they liued without any generall Prince throughout the land, vntil ſuch time as from the partes of Collao, came from the great lake called Titicaca, which is in circuite nere 80. Leagues, certaine warlike perſõs, which were called Ingas, they vſed to haue the here of their heads rounded, & boales in their eares, wherat did hang round peeces of gold: The eare in their language was called Ringrym. The chæfeſt of this newcome people was called *Sapalla Inga*, which is as much to ſaye, as onely Lorde, although ſome ſaye hee was called *Inga Vira Cocha*, which is to ſaye, the ſcumme or fatnes of the Sea, for becauſe they knew not the Origine from whence they came. They beleæued that they were bred of the ſayde great lake, out of the which runneth a Riuer toward the Eaſt, which in ſome places is halfe a league broad, and this Riuer falleth into another litle lake 40. leagues diſtant frõ the great lake, and there conſumeth without any other vent, with great admiration of ſuch as would conſider how ſo great a Riuer ſhould conſume in ſo ſmall a lake. But the ſaid lake is of ſuch depth that they can finde no bottome.

Wherefore it is thought, that by the inwarde bowels of the earth, the water entreth into the Sea, as doth the Riuer Alpheo in Græce.

This *Ingas* begã first to inhabit the citty of Cusco, & from thence they conquered & brought into subiectiõ al ỹ land, & their children successiuely inherited the Empire: that is to say, not the eldest son, but rather the second brother is alwaies successiuely heire to his eldest brother, & whẽ brethren wãteth to inherit, thã the eldest son inheriteth. The token or Crowne which those Princes vsed, was a Tassel made of red woll, which was worne vpon their heds, & came down to their eies, so ỹ when any gouernor was appointed to rule in any part of the realme, thã was deliuered vnto him, one of the threds of the Kings tassal, so ỹ with one of those simple threds, hẽ was obayed and estæmed euen as though the persõ royal had bin present, the like was neuer sæne in any place of the world: Nay, moreouer, I am bold to say, ỹ the obediẽce of those people vnto their Prince was such, that it hath happened one of those gouernors hauing but ỹ only thred frõ his Prince, & bæing sent therwith, hath slayne both men & wemen, of a whole Prouince, without any greater power, writing, or cõmission: But when those pore subiectes saw ỹ thred, they submitted them selues euen vnto death.

A marualious obedience.

By succession of those Kinges, *Ingas*, the State came vnto one called *Guaynacaua*, which is to say, a ritch young man, and hẽ it was that had gotten most coũtreyes to the augmenting of the estate, hẽ was also a louer of Iustice, and executed the same throughout his land, and brought the countrey to pollicy & tillage, which was thought in those daies a thinge vnpossible, that a barbarous people without learning and Letters, should gouerne with such consent & order, & his subiectes also to shew them selues so louing & obedient, in such wise, ỹ to shew their louing harts toward their Prince, they made two notable high waies in Peru, yea, such, ỹ it were very vnmæt they shuld be without remẽbrance, for none of those thinges which olde writers account to be of the seuen marualles of the world, was wrought with such difficultie, paines, & cost, as those high waies were made, when this Prince *Guaynacaua*

Nacaua went from the Cittie of Cuſco with his Armie, to conquer the cittie of Quito, which is neare 500. leagues diſtant, going by way of the mountaines, in which iorney hee was ſore troubled, becauſe thoſe waies were ſo Rockie & perilous, yea, and a man would haue thought thē vnpoſſible to paſſe: wherupon the Indians thought it mæte & conuenient to make a highe way for him, by the which he might returne with victory from the conqueſt: and to accōpliſh the ſame, they toke the worke in hand, & began the ſame along the mountaine ſide, both brode and plaine, & with force brake downe the rockes for that purpoſe, ſo that al thoſe barrankes or gutters, which came from a high out of the Mountaines, were filled and made euen with the ſame way, only by force of hand, yea, ſome time they were forced to carry vpwardes ẏ ſtuffe for the worke, aboue 20. fadom, ſo that this high way or cawſey indureth fiue hundred leagues & more. The report is, that whan the way was finiſhed, a Cart ladē might paſſe all the way: but ſince ẏ time, with the warres betwæne the Chriſtians & Indians, this high waie is now ſpoiled, to diſturbe ſuch as ſhould paſſe that way: and who had ſæne this way, mought wel conſider the charges, by the making plaine of only two leagues of mountaine, which are between two cities in ſpaine, called Segouia, & Guadarrama, which was as yet neuer perfectly finiſhed, being an ordinary high way, by the which the kings of Spaine do paſſe, when they trauaile with their houſeholdes into Andaluzia, or into the kingdome of Toledo. Theſe Indians not cōtented with ſo famous a peece of worke, when at another time their Prince *Guaynacaua* determined to viſit the Prouince of Quito, which he intirely loued, becauſe it was his owne conqueſt: hee went by the way of ẏ plaines, where his ſaid ſubiectes made for him another high way, almoſt as coſtly as the mountayn way, becauſe the riuers where their græne and freſh things do grow, doth occupy in ſome places neare three miles from the Riuer, through the which they wrought a Cawſey fortie

foote

of earthen walles on ech side, which were of three yardes of height. They cõtinued the same high way through the sandy places, with euident marks that the passengers could not mis their way, which also endureth all along ỹ said space of 500. leagues. But now these marks are spoiled also by meane of the sayd warres, but the walles of ỹ waies in the valleys are at this day whole & soũd, wherby the greatnes & maiestie of the worke may easily be iudged, so that the prince Guaynacaua went out by the one, & returned by ỹ other, hauing al the way as he should pas trimmed wᵗ boughes & flowers of maruailous swetnes.

Of the notable things that *Guaynacaua* caused to be done in *Peru*. Cap 14.

BEſides thoſe famous high wayes before declared, Guanacaua commaunded to bayld at euery ten Leagues end, in the mountayne vayes, certaine houſes made of a greate breadth, wherein were ſundry repertitiõs, and roomes ſufficient to receiue his owne perſon when he ſhould paſſe that way with all his familie and armie, & the like in the other high way in the plaines, although not ſo nighe the one to the other as the buildinge in the mountaines: But accoꝛding as the riuers lay, ſo was the building by reaſon of ſuccour and pꝛouiſion of water, and in this ſoꝛt they ſtoode diſtant fifteene, yea, and twentie Leagues. Theſe lodginges were called Tambos, whereas the Indians, in whoſe iuriſdiction they fel, had pꝛouiſion alwayes in ſtoꝛe of all thinges neceſſarie foꝛ his armie and hoaſt, not only of meate and dꝛinke, but alſo of all kinde of armour, apparrel, and weapon, which they vſed foꝛ the warres, in ſuch ſoꝛt, that one of thoſe Tambos, if nede required, was able to furniſh in euery reſpecte twenty oꝛ thirtie thouſand fighting men.

This Pꝛince caryed with him foꝛ his garde a great number of men of warre, with pikes, halberds, clubbes, and battle axes, of ſiluer, copper, and ſome of gold, and alſo ſeuerall ſoꝛts of ſlinges.

They made bꝛidges foꝛ Riuers, of timber, and thoſe Riuers which were ſo bꝛoad that thoſe kinde of bꝛidges would not ſerue, they vſed foꝛ them mightie long cables made of a certain kinde of Ruſhes, called Maquey, which is moꝛe ſtronger then hempe. Theſe cables are made faſt on ech ſide of the Riuer, ſo that from the one ſide to the other there were of length 200. paces.

And by ſkilfull arte, a certaine litle veſſell like vnto a great baſket ſerueth to paſſe ouer the wayfaring men, by the ſtay and helpe of the cable. Theſe kindes of paſſages the Indians doe maintaine at their coſtes & charges: I meane thoſe of the iuriſdiction where they fall.

princelie estate.

The king vsed to goe in his Litter made of plates of golde, which Litter was not drawen with any kinde of beasts, but only caried vpō noble mens shoulders, which alwayes attēded at his court, to the number of one thousand: who were also his best beloued, and of his counsell. Likewise these noble men when they went abroad, & attended not on the king, were also caried in Litters vpon their vassals shoulders. These Casikes had their prince in great honor, reuerence and estimation: so that when any Piere or great Estate had occasion to come to his Princes presence, his duetie was to come barefooted, & to bring his mantel on his shoulder, with some present wrapped therein to present to his Soueraigne, in token of duetie and obedience: So that if occasion serued to talk with ỹ Prince twēty times in one day, so oftē were they bound to bring him some new gift. Likewise, it was holden for a great offence to looke their Prince in the face, and if it hapned any of them to stumble when they carryed the Prince in his Litter, his head was stricken of for his labour.

In euery halfe leagne was appointed for the Princes seruice a foote Poast, which ordinarily did runne with greater spæde then the horse poast. When this Prince had conquered any Prouince, forthwith he commaūded the chiefest men of that place to be sent into some other Prouince of his kingdome already in subiection: And the Inhabitants there to come and abide in the Prouince newly discouered, for the greater securitie of his estate. And these people that were in this sort changed frō one Prouince to another were called Mitimaes.

Mitimaes.

Out of euery Prouince throughout his whole Dominiō they brought yerely vnto their prince certein tribute of such things as the countrey yealded, in so much that in some barrain soiles where no good commoditie grew, yet from thence they sent yerely also to the king in token of duetie & obedience certain loades, called burthens of litle Lizarts, as far as 300. leagues from Cusco.

This Prince Guaynacaua did rédifie the Temple of the sun, which was of old time foũded in the citie of Cuſco, & ſæled the Rookes and walles thereof with boerdes of ſiluer and golde. And becauſe a certaine noble mã which dwelled in the playnes had rebelled againſt him, called Chimocappa, who was a man of great poſſeſſion, and had more then one hundred leagues of ground, he went perſonally againſt him, & ſlew him in the field, & cõmaunded that from thencefoorth no Indiã of the plaines ſhould at any time were weapon, which order is kept vntill this day: yet notwithſtanding his ſucceſſor enioyed through the Princes fauour, ỳ prouince of Chimo, where at this preſent ſtandeth the citie of Trugillio. Chimocappa

Guaynacaua and his father toke an order for the breeding of cattaile, by meane whereof the coũtrey was wel prouided, out of the which they payd tithing, which they ſacrificed to the ſun. The chiefe cauſe of the eſtimation of gold amõg the Indians, was becauſe the king made al the veſſell for the ſeruice of his court of that mettal, and alſo Jewels for his perſon, & offerings for the Temple. The king had alwaies a chaire of gold caried with him to ſit in, of 16. carrets in fines, which was eſtæmed at 25000 dukets, & this chaire was one of the things ỳ Don Francisco Piſarro choſe for his iewel at the time of ỳ conqueſt: For according to the articles of agreement betwæne his Maieſtie & him, was agreed that of ỳ beſt Jewels which ſhould be found or taken at any victorye, hee ſhould haue one out of ỳ firſt choiſe of the whole treaſure. At ỳ birth of the firſt manchild which Guaynacaua had, he cõmãded a cable of gold wier to be made in remẽbrance of ỳ birth of his ſonne, that was of ſuch greatnes, as many Indiãs do affirme which are as yet liuing, that 200. ſtrong men could ſcarcely lift or beare, and alſo in remembrance of this memorable iewel he named his ſõne Guaſca, which in ỳ Indiã ſpæch is called a cable or great rope, & added therunto for his ſirname Inga, which is as much to ſay, as Emperour.

This example, I thought good to declare in this place for to conuince an opinion which is held in Spayne, among such as know not the fashions of India, and was, how that people esteemed no golde nor yet knew the valew therof: although it is true that they had many strãge vessels wrought of siluer and golde, and also images of men, wemen, sheepe, and many other kinde of beasts, and sundry kindes of herbes, wrought in the same metall, of exceeding cunning workmanship.

Of the estate of the warres when the Spaniards came into *Peru*. Chap. 15.

Although the principal intent of this Historie, was to set out the things hapned to the Spaniards which at that time conquered the land, and of their discouery since. But sithens this could not wel be done without touching somewhat of the estate of the Indians which then ruled: And also that it may be vnderstood it was the diuine permission that the Spaniards should come thither at such time as the land was deuided into two parcialities, for otherwise, it would haue seemed not only difficult, but also almost impossible. Therefore I will recite in briefe the estate which the Spaniards found the countrey in at their arrival.

After that Guaynacaua had brought into subiection so great a number of Prouinces to his Empire, for ỳ space of 500. Leagues, accounting from Cusco westward, he then determined to goe (in person) to conquere the Prouince of Quito, in the vttermost part whereof finished his dominion. So that he prouided on his iorney thitherward with a great armye, and being come thither, and hauing finished and quyeted that Prouince, he delighted much in that countrey, because it was a pleasant Soyle and holesome for his complection, whereupon hee abode there a great space, leuing in the citie of Cusco certain of his

his Sonnes and Daughters, amonge whom was his eldeſt ſonne, called *Guaſcar Inga*, *Mango Inga*, and *Paulo Inga* and diuerſe others. And in Quito hee married another Wife, Daughter vnto the Lorde of that Countrey, and of her hee begot a Sonne, called *Atabaliba*, who hee loued exceedingly: ſo that now hee determined to returne to Cuſco, leauinge his Sonne with a Tutor in Quito, but in this returne, hee found the Cauſey in the Mountayne broken and ſpoyled, as herebefore hath beene declared.

After hee had abode in Cuſco certaine yeares, hee determined to returne againe to Quito, not onely becauſe that Countrey contented him much, but alſo with deſire to ſee his Wife, and young Sonne, whom he loued more than any other of his Children: and this Iorney hee toke in hande, by the highe waye that was made in the Playnes, and from this time forward, hee returned no more to Cuſco, but abode all his life time in Quito, & gaue that Land or Prouince which hee had with force conquered, to his Sonne *Atabaliba*, becauſe the ſame had beene of his Grandfathers.

When *Guaynacaua* died, his Sonne *Atabaliba* toke poſſeſſion of his Armye, and of all his Fathers ritches, which were in that Prouince, although his greateſt treaſure was lefte in his Treaſury in the Cittie of Cuſco, in the cuſtody of his eldeſt Sonne, vnto whom, *Atabaliba* ſente Embaſſadors, giuinge him to vnderſtand, the deceaſe of his Father, and alſo ſubmittinge himſelfe to his obedience, beſeechinge his Maieſty that hee would ratifie the gift of his Prouince of Quito, which the Father of them both had left vnto him, conſidering that, that Prouince of Quito was conquered by their Father, after the maryage with his Mother: and moreouer, the Lande came by his Mother, and Anceſtors, and was not pertayning to the Crowne of Cuſco, or his inheritance.

Guaſcar made anſwere, that hee ſhould come to Cuſco and render vp vnto him the Army, and in ſo doinge, hee

would giue vnto, such Landes as should maintaine him like a man: but the state of Quito hee shoulde not haue, because it was the vttermost part of his Kingdome, and from thence hee ment to conquer forward, and alwaies there to maintayne a Garrison as a Frontier: And if vpon this warninge hee refused to come vnto him that then hee would bend his power against him, as an open enemy.

Atabaliba toke counsell vpon this matter, with two of his Fathers Captaynes, who were both wise and valyant in the Warres. The one was called *Quizquiz*, and the other *Cilicuchima*, who counsailed that hee should not abide his Brothers comminge, but that it might please him to begin to take that enterprise in hand, to meet him and to offer him the Battaile, if hee would not graunt to his request: and in so doing, hee might easely possesse all the Prouinces through the which hee should passe: and in this sorte his Army should daily increase, yea, and also by this meanes should force his Brother to graunt vnto his desire: this councell liked him well, wherupon hee personally with his whole Hoast departed from Quito, and dayly incroched the Countrey into his handes: *Guascar* hearinge of this newes, sente to encounter with him one of his cheefest Captaynes, with a company of light foote men, the which with great speede came to a Prouince called Tumibamba, one hundred Leagues distante from Quito, and there hauing notice how *Atabaliba* proceeded forward with all his power, they dispatched a post to Cusco to *Guascar*, aduertising him of the procedinge of *Atabaliba*, and besought him to send forthwith vnto them 2000. of the experteste men of Warre, for with them and vnder their gouernment, they had ready 30000 men of that onely Prouince, which people were called *Canares*, vnto which their request, *Guascar* prouided accordingly: and when those 2000 men were come, there ioyned with them the *Caziques* of Tumibamba, and the *Chaparas*, *Paltas*,

and

and *Canares*, theſe affaires beeinge knowen to *Atabaliba*, hee came with his power, and gaue them battaile, in the which many were ſlaine on both ſides, and the power of *Atabaliba* ouerthrowen, and hee himſelfe taken priſoner vpō the Bridge of the Riuer of Tumibamba, and whileſt the Souldiers of *Guaſcar* were occupied in paſtimes, and drunkenneſſe, triumphing of the victory: a certaine woman gaue in at a Windowe to *Atabaliba* where hee was Priſoner, a Bar of Copper, wherwith hee brake downe a Wall, & ſo fled vnto Quito, which was about 25. leagues from thence, and there began to geather another Hoaſte of men, makings them beleeue that his Father had conuerted him into a Snake, whan hee was Priſoner, and by that meanes hee was delyuered out of Priſon, creepinge out at a hole, and that his Father alſo promiſed him victorye, if hee retourned agayne vpon his enemies: wherupon his people willingly wente with him, and incounterd agayne with his enemies, and gaue them the ouerthrowe, but many were ſlayne on both ſides: ſo that vntill this day remaineth heapes of boanes of thoſe that at that time were ſlayne. Battaile. Seconde Battaile.

Atabaliba beeinge incouraged with this greate victorye, determined to goe againſt his Brother: and when hee came to Canares hee ſlew neare 60000. perſons, becauſe they were agaynſt him in the firſt Battayle, ſo that hee conſumed them all with Fier and Swoorde, and beate downe playne with the grounde all their habitations, and Towne of Tumibamba, which was planted in a fayre Playne, neare vnto three fayre Riuers.

From this place hee went conqueringe all the way as hee wente, and of ſuch as wente about to reſiſt him, hee left not one aliue: But ſuch as came vnto him offeringe their ſeruice, hee did louingly receaue, and in this manner his Hoaſt dailye increaſed: and when hee came to Tumbez hee minded to conquer by Sea the Ile of Puna,

but the Caſike of that Iland, came and defended his purpoſe with a great number of Rafles: *Atabaliba* conſideringe that the conqueſt of that place would require more time, and alſo hauing in remembrance how his Brother *Guaſcar* was comming towards him with all his power, hee therfore proceeded on his iorney towardes Cuſco, and when hee was come to *Caxamalca*, there hee ſtayed, and ſente twe of his Captaynes with 4000. men to diſcouer the way: and when they had diſcryed the Campe of *Guaſcar*, they returned ſecretly by another way, in the which by chaunce they mette with 700. of the cheefeſt men of *Guaſcars* Campe, among whom was *Guaſcar* him ſelfe, ſo that the company of *Atabaliba* ſet vpon them and ſlew the moſt of them, and tooke *Guaſcar* Priſoner, whervpon all *Guaſcars* Hoaſt inuironed them about, with determination to haue ſlayne them all. The Captaynes on the behalfe of *Atabaliba*, commaunded *Guaſcar* to warne his Captaynes to ſtaye their procéding, for otherwiſe, they would cut of his hedde: for ſayde they, our Princes comminge is not to indamage you, but that you would conſent that hee may quietly inioy his eſtate of Quito, reſerving his obedience, and vaſſallage towards you. When *Guaſcar* had heard and vnderſtood his Brothers deſire, and alſo with feare of his life, hee commaunded his men of Warre to procéde no further, but incontinent to retire backe againe to Cuſco, which was forthwith accordingly performed.

Guaſcar take Priſoner.

When *Atabaliba* vnderſtood his great good fortune, hee commaunded his Captaynes to bring his Brother Priſoner vnto him, to *Caxamalca*, where hee abode his comming. At this inſtant, came *on Franciſco Piſarro*, with all his company of Spanyardes, which hee had brought with him into Peru, ſo that hee had now opportunitie to begin his conqueſt, as at large in this ſecond Booke ſhalbe declared, for the Hoaſte of *Guaſcar*, for the moſt parte, were fledde, and alſo the Army of *Atabaliba*, for the moſt part, were diſcharged.

THE

THE SECOND BOOKE fol 25

of the Conqueſt which was atchiued in the Prouince of Peru, by Don Franciſco Piſarro, and his company. Chap. 1.

IN the former Boke is declared, how *Don Franciſco Piſarro* abode in Panama, after his returne from Spayne, preparinge thinges neceſſary, for the procædinges of the Conqueſt of Peru, yea, and alſo *Don Diego de Almagro*, did furniſh that voyage with as great a good will and charge, as at the firſt hee had begon, for in him onely did conſiſt the principall credit and ſtocke: but ſome cauſe of ſlacknes was, becauſe *Don Franciſco Piſarro* had not remembred his good will and dædes, when hee was in Spayne, nor yet brought any kinde of countenance of fauour for him, from the Emperours Maieſtie: but yet with ſufficiente excuſes they ioyned agayne into frændſhip, although hee neuer after bare any cordiall good will to his Brethren, eſpecially to *Fernando Piſarro*, who hee tooke to bee his Capital enemy.

Don Franciſco fraughted the Ship of *Hernando Ponce de Leon*, in the which hee ſhipped himſelfe & his foure Brethren, and alſo the moſt of his companye, of Horſemen and Fotemen, with great difficultie, becauſe many of them ſtoode in doubt of the Conqueſt, by meanes of the vnfortunate ſucceſſe and repulſes happened the yeares before: hee hoyſed vp Sayles in the beginninge of the yeare .1531. and the winde beeinge contrary, hee was forced to alande his men a hundred Leagues on this ſide the place that hee pretended.

And trauailing alonge the Coaſt, they were in great

extremity of victualles, by meane that they coulde not passe the Riuers, but only by swimminge, as well men as Horses: in which troubles, the valiant minde & courage of *Don Francisco*, did greatly animate them, yea, and the great perrill of his owne person, who letted not to passe ouer vpon his owne shoulders, suche as could not swimme, vntill at length they came to a Towne of Indians by the Sea side, called Coaque, which was ritche of Marchandize, and plentifull of victuals, where hee comforted his men which were weake, & brought low, with their troublesome Iorney.

Coaque.

From this Towne, hee sent two shippes to Panama, and Nicaragua, and in them the somme of 30000. Castlins of Golde, which hee had taken vp in Coaque, to the intent that they mought see in those Citties the likelyhoode of gayne, that might ensue of their trauailes, and to encourage them to follow his steps.

In this Towne of Coaque, they found some Emralds which were exceeding good, and fine: this Towne standeth vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne: there were some through couetousnes, lost much money, because they vnderstoode not the finenes nor goodnes of those stones, for they made their experience, taking Hammers to proone the hardnes of the stones, and so they spoyled many faire and ritch Iewels. After they had abode here a while, his men were vexed with ỹ sort of small Pox, of which heretofore hath bene spoken, so that fewe or none of all his Army escaped: Notwithstandinge, the Gouernour perswaded them, that euill constillacion of that Clymat, was the cause, wherupon they proceeded forward, vntill they came to the Prouince, called Puerto Viejo, conquering and pacifiyng the People, all the way as they went. At this place met with them, Captaine *Venealcasar*, and *Don Fores*, who were come from Nicaragua with their ship, in which they brought certaine Footmen, and Horsemen.

Of

Of the thinges which happened to the Gouernour, in the Iland of *Puna*, and the Conquest of the same. Chap. 2.

THe Prouince of Puerto Viejo beinge pacified, the Gouernour with his company toke the way toward Tumbez, and there hee determined to passe vpon Rafftes, which were prouided into the Iland of Puna, which standeth in ẏ front of Puerto Viejo, so that he passed ouer his Horsemen & Footemen with great daunger, because the Indian had deuised to cut the Ropes, wherwith the Rafftes were bound, and in that sorte to drowne & spoile his men. This pollicy beeing vnderstood by the Gouernour, hée gaue warning to all his company, that each should haue his Sword neare drawen, and to haue a vigilant eye to euery Indian. When they were arriued at the Iland, the Indians came and offered them peace, and also curteously entertained them: Notwithstanding they had prepared a Snare or Ambush to haue slayne them all that night: howbeit the Gouernour had notice therof, wherupon hée forthwith set vpon them, and toke their Cascike Prisoner: Yet neuertheless, the next day, the Gouernour and all his men were inuironed with Indians, men of Warre. Than the Gouernour and his Brethren with great courage, toke their horses, and placed their men in good order, and sent other some, for the sauegard of the ships which rode neare the shoare.

The Spanyards fought so manfully, that in short time the Indiã enemies were put to flight & many of thẽ woũded & slaine, at which assault (only) .3. Spanyards were slaine, but diuerse sore hurte, especially *Gonsalo Pisarro*, who was daungerously wounded on his knee. Than arriued Captaine *Hernando de Soto* with moe men, aswell footmen as horsemẽ, which also came frõ Nicaragua, so ẏ now the Indians beinge fled to their Rafftes, they wandered among the Warishes in such sorte, that they were safe from the Christians.

Then determined the Gouernour to passe vnto Tumbez, after he had deuided among his soldiars the spoyle of gold and other things which they had there obtained, and also because that Iland was very apt to diseases, lying nere vnto the Equinoctiall.

How the Gouernour came to *Tumbez*, and of the conquest which he made vntill he had inhabited the citie of Saint Mighell. Chap. 3.

IN this Iland of Puna were captiues about 600. men and women of Tumbez, and one principall person of Tumbez also, who was likewise captiue: the Gouernour gaue them all their liberty, and sente them home into their Countrey, and when hee him selfe had taken shippinge, to passe vnto Tumbez, hee sente three of his men with some of those Indians, whom hee had set at liberty, thinking that the Townes men of Tumbez would haue beene thankefull, for the good tourne receiued: so that his three men passed with certayne of those Indians vpon a Raffe, and arriued sooner than the Gouernour. But as soone as they were arriued, the Indians sacrificed those three Spanyards to their Idols, in recompence of the great liberalitie which the Gouernour had extended to them, in the deliuering them out of captiuitie: the like also had hapned to Captayne *Hernando de Soto*, who also had passed vpon a Raffe, with one of his men which attended on him, if by good hap *Diego de Aguero*, and *Rodrigo Losano* had not at that instant arriued, and entered the Riuer of Tumbez, who aduised him of the daunger that hee was falling into. Now also the Countrey beinge reuolted, the Gouernour wanted Raffes to vnship his Men, and Munition, wherupon that night there came none a Land but the Gouernour, *Hernando*, & *Thomas Biſarro* his Brotherne, Father *Vincent* of Valuerde, Captayne

tayne *Soto*, and other two Spanyardes, they alighted not from their Horses all that night, although they were throughly wet with the Seagate whē they came a shore vpon a Raffe from the ship, which Raffe also was ouerthrowen at their comminge a shore, for want of knowledge. *Hernando Pisarro* abode at the water side to sée both Men, Horses, and furniture vnshipped, but the Gouernour proceeded forwarde for the space of two Leagues, and coulde not attaine to the speeche of any Indian, for they were fled vnto the Mountaines with their Armor, wherupon hee returned backe againe to the Sea side, where hee met with Captayne *Mena*, and Captaine *Ihon de Salzedo*, which were come to seeke for him, with certayne Horsemen, which were newly vnshipped, and had gathered togeather many of the Gouernours company, which had strayed abrode.

And then the Gouernour pitched his Campe in Tumbez: in this meane while came Captaine *Benalcasar*, who had remained to see the residew of the men shipped from the Iland, who duringe the time of his abode there, had many skirmishes with the Indians.

The Gouernour abode in Tumbez twentie dayes, sendinge daily Embassadors to the Lorde of that Soyle, requiring him to yeeld to the Emperors seruice, but all was in vaine, for he would neuer accept that freendship. rather he did much hurt, and spoyled many of his men of seruice, called Labrers, when they went abrode to seke victuals for the Campe: and the Spanyardes could not annoy them in any respecte, because they were on the other side of the Riuer, vntill at length the Gouernour made Raffes, in such secret sorte, ỳ the Indian enemies had no vnderstanding therof: so that in an Euening, he with his Brethren *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pisarro*, with Captaine *Soto* & *Benalcasar*, passed on those Raffes 50. Horses ouer the Riuer, and trauailed al that night by a troublesome narrow way, among Thornes, Briers, & Rockes,

so that when it drew nere day, he came and set vpon the enemies campe, and made a marueylous spoile among them, which endured with fire and sword the space of 15. dayes, in reuenge of the three Spaniards which the Indians had so trayterously sacrificed, in recompence of the libertie which the Gouernour gaue them in the Iland of Puna.

The Castike of Tumbez seeing the great hurt done vnto them, yealded himselfe, and in token of submission, he presented to the Gouernour certaine gold & siluer. Thē he procæded on his discouery with the most part of his company, leauing the residue with his Maiesties Auditour. *Antonio Nauarro*, & the Treasorer *Alonso Requelme* and iorneyed til he came to the riuer of Poechos, which stoode 30. Leagues distant from Tumbez, and obtayned peace with all the Cascikes and Townes which were on the borders of that Riuer: He also discouered the port of Payta, which was accounted the best harbor in al ỹ coast.

To this place came messengers to the gouernour from Cusco from the Prince *Guascar*, geuing him to vnderstād the rebellion of his brother *Atabaliba*, who as yet was not apprehēded, as before hath bene declared, craving at his hands succour and defence against his sayd brother. With these ioyful newes the Gouernor sent his brother *Hernando Pisarro* back againe to Tumbez to bring away w̄ him all the remainder of his cōpany, which had abode behinde, & when he had so done, he inhabited w̄ them in ỹ Citie of S. Michel, which sometime was a town of Indians called Tangarara scituated on ỹ Riuer side of Chira, not far from the sea, where was an excæding good harbor for the shippes which came from Panama, & hauing here deuided their gold & plate which was presented in this Coast vnto them. The gouernour prouided forward leauinge certaine of his men for Citizens of ỹ new citty, & toke his way towarde ỹ Prouince of Caxamalca, because hee had intelligence how *Atabaliba* was there.

How

How the Gouernour came to *Caxamalca*, and what there happened. chap. 4.

IN this iorney to *Caxamalca*, the Gouernor and his armie passed great extremitie of thirst in a desert without habitatiō, of .20. leagues lōg, where was neither trē, bush, nor water, but only al sandy ground & very hot. At the end of 20. Leagues he came into the Prouince of Motupe, where he found fresh & pleasant Valleys, replenished wᵗ many Villages, where hee well refreshed his army with ẏ great aboundance of victuals which he there found, and as he went from thence, ascēding into the mountaines, he met wᵗ a messenger which came from *Atabaliba*, who brought vnto him for a prescēt, a paire of paynted Shoes, and a payre of hand ruffes of golde, beseeching him that when he shoulde come before his Prince *Atabaliba*, to weare those Shooes on his feete, and also to weare the ruffs accordingly, to thentent that he might be knowen by those tokens.

The Gouernour receiued thankefully the present, & promised that he would fulfill his request, and moreouer that he should certifie *Atabaliba*, that his comming was not to offēd him, if notorious wrong were not offered vnto him: Because, sayd he, the Emperour king of Castile, who sent me hither, commaunded that I should not attempt to displease any, without reason. With this answere, the messenger departed, and the Gouernour likewise followed with great foresight, that no enemy should disturbe his passage.

When he came to Caxamalca, he met with another messenger, which came to aduertise him that he should not take vp his lodging without expresse cōmaundement from *Atabaliba*. To this ambassage, ẏ Gouernour made no answere, but rather toke vp his lodging according as he thought good.

And than he sent captaine *Soto* with twentie horsmen wel trimmed to Atabaliba his Campe, which stoode one League distant from the Gouernours lodging, to signifie vnto him the arryuall of his Generall. When Captaine *Soto* came in sight of Atabaliba, he set spurres to his horse as though he would haue run against an armed man, which brauery did not a litle amase the poore Indians, who with all hast fled out of his way. But for their labour, Atabaliba commaunded them to be slayne, and would geue *Soto* no answere of his embassage, vntill *Fernando Pisarro* came, who the Gouernour sente after *Soto* with another company of horsemen, but he tolde his minde to one of gis noble Tascikes, and the Tascike declared his saying to the interpreter, and the Interpreter to *Soto*. But to *Hernando Pisarro* hee spake personally by the mouth of the only Interpreter: Vnto whom *Pisarro* sayd, that his brother the Gouernour came from the Emperour his Maiestie, and to know his royall will, he only desired that it might please him to signifie whether hee might freely come vnto his presence, & to be accepted as his frend. Vnto whom Atabaliba answered ỹ hee would freendly accept his offer, so that hee would returne the golde and plate which since the entrance into his land, he had taken from his Indian subiectes, and also that forthwith he would depart his countrey and dominions, and to take order with him in these causes, he ment the next day to meete him at a certaine place called Tambo de Caxamalca.

When *Hernando Pisarro* had receaued this answere he beheld the great number of tents which were in the Campe of Atabaliba, which seemed vnto him a great Citie, and then tooke his leaue and returned with his answere to the Gouernour, and when hee was come to his brother, hauing declared what he had heard and seene, it somewhat discouraged him, hauing for euery Christian 200. Indians. But notwithstanding, he and all his company

pany beeing hautie minded and also of great stomacke. The night followinge they comforted one another, putting their only confidence in God, so that than they occupied them selues in trimminge their Armor and other Furniture, without takinge any rest of slæpe the whole night.

How the Battayle was giuen to *Atabaliba*, and the taking of him Prisoner. Chap. 5.

THe next day following, the Gouernor early in the morninge, set his Armye in good order, deuydinge 60. Horsemen into three partes, and placed them in Ambush in seuerall places, vnder the gouernment of Captaine *Soto*, and Captaine *Benalcasar*: & for their Chiefetaines hæ appointed his thræ Brethren, *Hernando*, *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pisarro*, and hæ himselfe went with the infantry, which is to be vnderstode al sortes of armed footemen, prohibiting that none should stir without his watchword, and the great ordinance shot of: *Atabaliba* likewise set in good order his men of war, appointing conuenient ground for his captaines to geue the onset. Ye also commaunded that where he iudged the most danger of the christian force, that one of his chiefe captaines called *Rumiñagui* should attend, that if nede required, he might set on the Spanyards at their flight.

In this order *Atabaliba* set forward with great consideration and leasure, that he was at the least 4. houres going one litle league. Yee himselfe was caryed in his litter vpon noble mens shoulders. There went before him 300. gentlemen attired in one sort of liuery, making cleere his way of all such stones & dust, euen to the very strawes that might disturbe him.

Then followed the rest of the nobilitie carryed vpon

their vassales shoulders in a certaine kinde of Litters, esteeming in nothing the christian force, but rather iudged to take them napping, without any kind of resistãce, because a certaine Indian K. Ruler sent word to *Atabalipa*, that these newcome men were but few in number, yea such as could not trauail on foote, but of necessitie were forced to ryde on greate strange sheepe. Requesting therefore that he might haue the vauntgard.

But when hee came to the place called Tambo of Caxamalca, and saw but the company of Footemen, because the Horsemen lay in ambush, hee deemed that those ryders on the great Sheepe durst not appeare. Whereupon he went into his Litter, saying these men haue already yealded, and the others confirmed his sayinge.

Then came the Bishoppe, father *Vincent de Valuerde*, with a Breuiary in his handes, saying: That one God in Trinitie had created Heauen, Earth, and all Creatures. Hee also made Adam, the first man on the earth, and also made Eue his wife of a ribbe taken out of his body: Of which two persons all mankinde were engendred, and that through the disobedience of these two persons, our forefathers, we al fel into sinne, so that we could not obtain grace to enter into heauen, to enioy the sight of God, until Christ our redeemer came & was borne of a pure virgine, to saue vs, and for that intent & effecte hee suffered most bitter death and passion.

After the which, the thirde day hee rose agayne glorified, and for certayne dayes hee abode in the world, and then ascended vp into heauen, leauing for teachers of his holy Lawes, his sacred Apostles.

Furthermore (sayde hee) this our Countrey God hath left in charge to the Emperoure of Christians called the Lorde Charles our Soueraigne: who hath sent in his steade the Gouernour Don Fran-

cisco

cisco Pisarro, who is here present to warne and notifye vnto you on Gods behalfe, all my former wordes. And also if you will belæue, and bee baptyzed, rendering obedience to his Maiestie, as a greate parte of Christendome doeth, hee will defende you, and also maintayne your Countrey in peace and iustice, and reserue vnto you your Liberties as hee hath vsed to doe to other kings and princes.

But if this gentle offer bee refused, the Gouernoure here present, will committe you to cruell warre, with Fyer and Sworde, and the Launce in hand.

And as touching the Faith of Jesu Christ, and his holy Gospell, after that yée shall be well instructed therein, and wyll assuredlye belæue the same, you shall then doe the thinges conuenyent for the saluation of your soules. But if not, you shall not be forced thereunto.

When *Atabaliba* had heard the Bishoppes relasion, hee aunswered, how that Countrey and all therein contayned, his Father and Auncestors had gotten, and lefte the same to his Brother *Guascar Inga*, and because at that instante hee had ouercommen him in battayle, and had hym Prysoner, the Lande appartayned vnto him, and that by meanes thereof hee possessed the same, and therefore hee vnderstoode not how the Emperour, or by what title could require his Countrey: But (quoth he) I wil defend his pretence.

And as concerning Jesu Christ, and his mightie workes, he said, ẏ he knew nothing therof, uor yet belæued that there was anye other Creator but only the Sunne, who hee helde for his chiefe God, and the earth for their mother: And that the Gods called *Guacas*, and *Pachacama*, had created all other earthly thinges. And as touching the Emperour, he knew not what he was, because he neuer saw him.

He also demaunded how the bishop did know that all those thinges were true which hee had rehearsed vnto him. The bishop answered, that in the booke which hee held in his hand, therein those things were written, and that the same booke was holy scripture come from God.

Atabaliba desired that he would let him see that booke, which forthwith was deliuered vnto him, and hauing it in his hands, he turned from leafe to leafe. Why (quoth he) this booke speaketh not one word to me, & therewith threw it on the ground: Wherewith the bishop taking vp his booke againe, cryed, vpon them, vpon them. But the Gouernour expecting that the Indians should haue begun, meaning therby to haue the greater aduauntage, but now thinking it not conuenient to make any longer delay, he sent word to his brother *Hirnando Pisarro*, that he should geue the onset, and also forthwith commaũded the Ordinance to be shot of, and then the horsemen began to encounter with the force of the enemie in three partes, and the Gouernour with the footemen toke the way to the personall force of *Atabaliba*, & brake the array of his front, euen vntil he came to his Litter, where hee slew the Calcikes which carryed the Litter, who were no sooner slayne, when others tooke the place.

But the Gouernour seeing the victory, as he thought long, and although many Indians were slayne, yet the death of one of his men did import much, whereupon hee him selfe with noble courage came to the Litter of *Atabaliba*, and tooke him by the heare of his head, which he vsed to weare long, according to the vse of his coũtrey, & with force drew him out of the Litter. In the meane season, his company were so vehemente, that they so lashed with their Weapons on the Litter which was of Golde fast by mishap, they hurt the Gouernours hand, and although a greate troupe of Indians came to rescue their Prince, yet it preuayled not, but in fine, was taken Prisoner by the Gouernour. But when his Warriers

saw

ſaw their Chiefetaine taken, and they aſſaulted on euery ſide, and eſpecially, with the fury of the Horſemen, to whoſe force they had not beene accuſtomed: they began to retire and flye with all ſpæde poſſible, leauinge their Armour behinde them: yea, the haſte in the retire was ſuch, that one diſturbed another: in the flight the Horſemen made great ſpoyle among them, and followed their Victory, till the night cauſed them to ceaſe.

But whan the Indian Captaine of greateſt truſt, called *Ruminagui*, heard the thunderinge noyſe of the Ordenance, and alſo ſaw his priuy Matche, which ſtode on a high Rocke, throwen downe by a Chriſtian: then fearing the daunger, hæ with all his charge alſo, toke them to the ſwiftnes of their feete, and neuer reſted vntil he came to the Prouince of Quito, which was diſtant from the place where the Battayle was, aboue 250. Leagues, as hereafter ſhalbe declared.

How *Atabaliba* commaunded his Brother *Guaſcar* to be ſlayne, and how *Hernando Piſarro* proceeded in the Diſcouery. chap. 6.

When *Atabaliba* was taken Priſoner, the next day following, the Treaſure and ſpoile was ioyned together, and aſſuredly it was a rare, yea and maruailous thinge, to ſee the number of Veſſels, both of Siluer & Golde, which was found in the Indian Campe: and alſo the gallaunt Tentes, made after their faſhion, and many ſtraunge garments: The veſſels of Golde, was eſtæmed in 60000. Poyzes, which is accounted ſeuen ſhillings ſterling to euery poyze, and this veſſel was for the ſeruice of the only perſon of *Atabaliba*. And alſo 5000. women which ſubmitted themſelues willingly to the Spanyardes commaundement.

And when theſe things were ended, *Atabaliba* ſayd

vnto the Gouernour, sithence you haue mée now Prisoner in your power, vse me fauourably, and for my raunsome and libertye, I will giue this Quaderne place, or house full with vessels and peces of Golde, and so much Plate as you will reasonably demaund. And when his offer was in this sorte declared, hee thought that the Gouernour tooke his sayings to be a thing vnpossible, wherfore hee replyed againe, sayinge: I will performe what I haue saide, and somewhat more.

The Gouernor answered, that hee would deale frendly with him, accordinge to his request: *Atabaliba* gaue him most hartie thankes, and forthwith dispatched messengers throughout his Dominions, and especially, to Cusco, to gather together the golde and Plate, which hee had promised for his raũsome, which was iudged a thing vncredible to bee performed, for the conenaunt was, to giue full of the saide Treasure, a certaine house in Caxamalca, as high as the same *Atabaliba* could reach with his hand, standinge on the ground, and the like in compasse, accordinge to the height, and to make his promise the playner, hee marked out with a red Lyne, the plot which hee would fill with the sayde vessels of Golde and Plate: but notwithstandinge, that dailye, came great store of Treasure into the Campe, yet the Spanyardes thought it not sufficiente for a foundacion of the performance of *Atabaliba*, his promise, wherupon they began amonge them selues to murmure, saying: the time passeth away and *Atabaliba* complyeth not with vs his raunsome, consideringe that his day is past: But saide they, it is to bee thought that with this pollicy, hee meaneth to geather a new Army, & so to come sodainly vpon vs to our distruction. *Atabaliba* being a sencible and wise man, vnderstood the murmuring of the Christians, he demaunded of the Gouernor ẏ cause of their muttering & secret cõference: who informed him of the matter, euen as it was: Why answered hee, as yet they haue no reason to complaine of

the

the delay, for the day of paiment is scarcely paste, & that they ought to haue consideration, ỳ the place which was the Cittie of Cusco, from whence the greatest part of his raunsome should come, stood distant frõ Caxamalca 200. long leagues of euil way, & moreouer the treasure should be brought vpõ mens shoulders: by reasõ wherof he praied not to thinke the time long, nor yet to thinke it vnpossible, ỳ he was able to performe his promise, ỳ premisses considered, it was not much to haue pacience for one Moneth, more or lesse: but yet said hee, for your more quicker dispatch, let one or two of your company goe vnto Cusco, to see the thing which I haue affirmed. Vpon this point there were sundry opinions among the Christians, whither they mought giue credit to *Atabaliba* his words, and also, how it was not a thing conuenient to put any christian in the Indian power: when *Atabaliba* had vnderstood their meaning, he laughed, saying: I maruaile that any christiã should stand in distrust of my word & security in the iorney to Cusco. Do ye not consider how ye haue my person prisoner in Chaines, & also my wiues & Childrẽ in your power: with this answere, they determined that Captaine *Soto*, and *Pedro del Barro*, should go to Cusco, who by the cõmaundement of *Atabaliba* were carried in Litters vpon the Indians shoulders, & had for their Gard a great company of *Atabalibas* Souldiers: and in this order they iorneyed by poste, for those Littermen presume to make great spede, and abhor slow iorneyes, yet only two men do carry the Litter at one time, notwithstanding 50. or 60. persons attend vpõ euery Litter, and so they goe runninge with their burden for a space, and thẽ are ready other two for to take the burden. In ỳ way as they wente, they met *Atabaliba* his Captaines, who brought his Brother Prince *Guascar* prisoner, who was desirous to talke wt the said Captaine *Soto*, & his cõpaniõ, of whõ he was informed, of such thinges which had happned, & also what their pretẽce & cõming into ỳ coũtry was

But when Guascar vnderstood the Emperours meaning, and also the intent of the christian gouernour, in his name, which was aswel to maintayne in iustice ỹ christians as the Indians which he should conquere, & that euery one might enioy his owne, he then discouered the discord betweene him and his brother, and how his brothers intent was to disherite him of his kingdome and estate, which of right was his owne inheritance by discent from his father *Guaynacaua*, and for this purpose he was now carryed prisoner to be slaine.

Wherefore hee most humbly besought them to returne backe againe with him, to open his doliens to the Lord Marques their Gouernour, beseeching him, that sithens they both brethren were at that instant in his power, and he of right being absolute Lord of the land, that it might please him to see iustice executed betweene thē, and to geue iudgement to which of them the kingdome did appartaine, considering that as he was enfourmed, his only comming was for that intent. And if, sayd hee, ỹ Marques wil take this matter in hand, I will not only see performed the summe of golde and plate, promised by *Atabaliba* to be deliuered at Tambo in Caxamalca: But I wil also fill al that house called Tambo, euen to ỹ roofe, which should be three times as much and more that hys brother had promised, requesting them to make enquiry whether he were a man of power to performe his offer, with greater facilitie then his brother was able to performe his promise. For *Atabaliba* to accomplishe his raunsome, should be forced to spoyle the rich Temple of the Sunne, in the citie of Cusco, which was wainscoted with boord of gold and plate in equall panes, because hee had no other remedy, nor from whence to haue any other quantitie.

But I (quoth he) haue in my power all the treasure and iewels of my father, wherewith I may easilye performe much more then I haue spoaken. Wherein hee

said

sayd the trueth, although his said treasure was hidden vnder groũd, in such place as no mã liuing know where it was but only he himselfe, and as yet vntil this day, it is not knowen: for the multitude of Indians which carryed the same to the secret place where it was buryed, as soone as the sayd treasure was hidden, they were by his commaundement all slayne, because the place should not be discouered: Although since the winning of the Countrey, the Spanyardes haue sought and digged in many places where they suspected the treasure to be hidden. But vntill this day they could not attayne to the knowledge thereof. Captaine *Soto* and *Petro del Barrio*, made answere to *Guascar*, that they could not leaue of from ẏ iorney which they had in hand, but with al spẽde possible they meant to returne, and then they would solicite his suite and request, and so departed and proceeded on their iorney, which was ẏ only cause of *Guascars* death, and also the losse of al the said wonderful treasure: for the captaines which carryed him prisoner, gaue intelligence by poast to *Atabaliba*, of all the talke had betweene the Spanyards and *Guascar*. But *Atabaliba* considered with him selfe, that if this matter should come in question before the Gouernour, aswell for that *Guascar* had iustice on his side, as also for the great abundance of gold by his brother offred, & knowing also ẏ great loue & affection that the Spaniards bare to the goldẽ mettall, he feared by these meanes that ẏ kingdome should be geuen to his brother: yea, and so it might fall out, that for ẏ causes aforsaid, he might be slain, to put all matter out of question, & therfore he determined to kil his said brother, yet he feared ẏ enterprise, because he had heard say that ẏ christians had a law among thẽ, that whosoeuer did kill any of their nation, should therefore also be killed. And thereupon he deuised to proue the Gouernours minde in that case, the which he put in vre with great industry, and on a day he fayned great sorrow, with teares and

Ouerfight.

But when Guascar vnderstood the Emperours meaning, and also the intent of the christian gouernour, in his name, which was aswel to maintayne in iustice ẏ christians as the Indians which he should conquere, & that euery one might enioy his owne, he then discouered the discord betweene him and his brother, and how his brothers intent was to disherite him of his kingdome and estate, which of right was his owne inheritance by discent from his father *Guaynacaua*, and for this purpose he was now carryed prisoner to be slaine.

Wherefore hee most humbly besought them to returne backe againe with him, to open his doliens to the Lord Marques their Gouernour, beseeching him, that sithens they both brethren were at that instant in his power, and he of right being absolute Lord of the land, that it might please him to see iustice executed betweene thē, and to geue iudgement to which of them the kingdome did appartaine, considering that as he was enfourmed, his only comming was for that intent. And if, sayd hee, ẏ Marques wil take this matter in hand, I will not only see performed the summe of golde and plate, promised by *Atabaliba* to be deliuered at Tambo in Caxamalca: But I wil also fill al that house called Tambo, euen to ẏ roofe, which should be three times as much and more that hys brother had promised, requesting them to make enquiry whether he were a man of power to performe his offer, with greater facilitie then his brother was able to performe his promise. For *Atabaliba* to accomplishe his raunsome, should be forced to spoyle the rich Temple of the Sunne, in the citie of Cusco, which was wainscoted with boord of gold and plate in equall panes, because hee had no other remedy, nor from whence to haue any other quantitie.

But I (quoth he) haue in my power all the treasure and iewels of my father, wherewith I may easilye performe much more then I haue spoaken. Wherein hee

said

sayd the trueth, although his said treasure was hidden vnder groũd, in such place as no mã liuing know where it was but only he himselfe, and as yet vntil this day, it is not knowen: for the multitude of Indians which carryed the same to the secret place where it was buryed, as soone as the sayd treasure was hidden, they were by his commandement all slayne, because the place should not be discouered: Although since the winning of the Countrey, the Spanyardes haue sought and digged in many places where they suspected the treasure to be hidden. But vntill this day they could not attayne to the knowledge thereof. Captaine *Soto* and *Petro del Barrio*, made answere to *Guascar*, that they could not leaue of from ẏ iorney which they had in hand, but with al spẽde possible they meant to returne, and then they would solicite his suite and request, and so departed and proceeded on their iorney, which was ẏ only cause of *Guascars* death, and also the losse of al the said wonderful treasure: for the captaines which carryed him prisoner, gaue intelligence by poast to *Atabaliba*, of all the talke had betweene the Spanyards and *Guascar*. But *Atabaliba* considered with him selfe, that if this matter should come in question before the Gouernour, aswell for that *Guascar* had iustice on his side, as also for the great abundance of gold by his brother offred, & knowing also ẏ great loue & affection that the Spaniards bare to the goldẽ mettall, he feared by these meanes that ẏ kingdome should be geuen to his brother: yea, and so it might fall out, that for ẏ causes aforesaid, he might be slain, to put all matter out of question, & therfore he determined to kil his said brother, yet he feared ẏ enterprise, because he had heard say that ẏ christians had a law among thẽ, that whosoeuer did kill any of their nation, should therefore also be killed. And thereupon he deuised to proue the Gouernours minde in that case, the which he put in vre with great industry, and on a day he fayned great sorrow, with teares and

Ouerfight.

sobbinge, and would neither eate nor drinke, nor speake with anye man, although the Gouernour did earnestly enportune him to declare the cause. At the length hee began to say, that hee had vnderstood and receiued newes, how a Captaine of his, seeinge him Prisoner, had slayne his Brother *Guascar*, the which was no small greefe for him, for hee loued him not onely because he was his elder Brother, but rather hee held him in stead of a father, and although hee was the occasion to take him prisoner, it was not to the intente to hurte his person, nor yet to vsurpe his Kingdome, but only that hee should permit him to inioye his Prouince of Quito, which his Father had giuen vnto him, after that hee had conquered it: which Prouince was also out of the dominion of Cusco.

The Gouernour hearinge his sorrowfull complaint, comforted him, and bid him bee of good cheare, sayinge moreouer, that death was a thing natural: and when the Countrey should bee quieted of all dissencions, then hee would make informacion to know who they were which consented and procured his Brothers death, and punish them accordingly.

When *Atabaliba* perceiued that the Gouernour tooke the matter so slightly, hee then fully determined to execute the thing which hee had deuised, and sente priuily to the Captaines, who had the keepinge of *Guascar*; expresse commission to kill him, which was forthwith committed with such speede, that it was neuer certainly knowen whither hee was slayne in the time that *Atabaliba* made his fained mourninge, or afterwarde, of which euill successe, the principall fault was laide to Captaine *Soto*, and *Pedro de Barrio*, who were so presse in their determined iorney to Cusco.

The Indians doth report than when *Guascar* saw that hee should die, hee said I haue beene a small while, Lord of this Land, and lesse shalbe the traytour my Brother, by whose commaundement I now must die, beeing his na-

turall

turall Prince: the which his words were well remembred: for when they ſaw *Atabaliba* ſlaine, as in this nexte Chapter ſhalbe declared, they called to remembrance his wordes, and ſaid verely, that *Guaſcar* was a Prophet, & childe of the Sunne, conſideringe how his wordes came to paſſe, hee alſo ſayd, that when his Father departed frō him, hee warned him, that whē a white people, bearded, ſhould come into that Countrey, that hee ſhould ſubmit him ſelfe vnto them, becauſe (ſaid hee) they ſhalbe Lords ouer this Countrey, although this thy Fathers Prophecie ſeemed ſtrange, yet through the induſtry of the Diuel it might be knowen, for ſo much it happenēd before *Guaynacaua* died. The Lord Marques went conquering along the coaſt of Peru, and alſo when he abode in Caxamalca, hee ſente his Brother *Hernando Piſarro*, with certayne Horſemen, to diſcouer the Countrey, who proceeded till hee came to Pachacama, which ſtandeth in the Prouince of Guamacucho, where hee met with a Brother of *Atabaliba*, called *Illeſcas*, who brought more thē 300000 poyzes of Golde, towarde the raunſome of his Brother, beſide a great quantitie of Plate: who after hee had paſſed many daungerous wayes, and perrilous Bridges, & was come to Pachacama, hee there had intelligence how a Captaine of *Atabaliba* called *Cilicuchima*, abode in the Prouince of Xauxa with a great Armie, which might be about fortie leagues from that place, vnto whō he ſent, requiring him to come vnto him, but the Indian Captayne denied his requeſt: whernpon *Hernando Piſarro* determined to goe & talke with him, although his men cōmended not his enterprize, to bee ſo bolde to put him ſelfe in his enemies power, who was a man of great might, but in fine, when *Piſarro* had ſpoken with him, and through his perſwaſiō, the Indian Captaine diſcharged his men, and went perſonally with him to Caxamalca, to ſée his Lord *Atabaliba*, but when hée ſhould enter into the place where hée was, hee put of his Shoes, and tooke vpon his ſhoulders the preſent, which they were wont to preſent him withall:

and with sorrowfull countenance, the teares droppinge from his eyes, hee sayd: O mighty Prince, if I had been with you at the time of your apprehencion, the Christians had now possessed your person.

Atabaliba answered, that it was Gods iudgement that hee should be Prisoner, and also to be taken with so smal a company of straungers: But said hee, the principall occasion was the slight of my Captaine *Ruminagui*, with 5000. men, in whom I put my onely trust.

How *Atabaliba* was slayne, and the occasion was layde to his charge, howhe went about to murder the Christians, and how *Don Diego de Almagro* came into *Peru* the second time. Chap. 7.

THe Lord Marques *Pisarro*, Gouernour, beeinge in the Prouince of Poechos, before hee came to Caxamalca, as before is declared, he receiued a priuye Letter without firme, which afterward was knowen to come frō the Secretary of *Don Diego de Almagro*, frō Panama, wherin was giuen to vnderstand, how *Don Diego* had builte a great Ship, with the intent, that with the same & others he ment with al his power to passe personally into Peru, to intercept the Gouernours procædinges, and to place & possesse, the best soyle in all the Land to his vse, which ground did lye beyonde the Limittes, discouered by the Marques: the which according to a prouision receiued from the Emperour, did contayne from the Equinoctiall Lyne forward 250 Leagues, directly North, and South: This Letter the Gouernour kept in secreat, and would make none of his frendes priuye therunto, but yet hes beleeued, and it was true, that *Don Diego de Almagro* had taken shippinge, accordinge to the tenour of the Letter, which he had receiued, and was on his way toward Peru, arriued at Puerto Viejo, where in effecte *Don Diego* after his

his arriual, vnderſtood the good ſucceſſe and proceedings of the Gouernour, and how hee had in his power marualious treaſure, of Golde and Plate, wherof according to the articles of agreement made betweene them, at the firſt beginning of the Diſcouery, the one halfe was, and did appertaine vnto him: He nowe knowinge that the Gouernour had aduiſe of his comminge, and the ſame to be done by his owne Secretary, hee forthwith cõmaunded his Secretary to be hanged, and with all his power proceeded on his Iorney, till hee came where the Gouernour was in Caxamalca, where hee found a great part of the raunſome of *Atabaliba* gathered togeather, which was a ſtrange ſight both to him & his company, for they thought that in the whole world was not ſo much Golde and Siluer. And the ſame day that the Saymaiſter had made his enſay of the Gold and Plate, which belonged to the company. The Golde onely, did amount to one Million, and eyght hundred thouſand Poyzes: & yet the enſay was made verye ſlight, for the Golde was of greater value: the want of ſtrong water was the defect, ſo that the enſay was made two or three Carets baſer than the fineneſs, wherby the valuaciõ was found 300000 Poyzes to litle. And concerning the Plate, the quantity was great, ſo that the Emperours fifte parte, amounted in fine Siluer 600000 Poyzes, and yet in the ſame plate was Golde of three & foure Carettes: wherof the Emperour his parte was 300000 Poyzes, euery Horſeman had for his ſhare 12000 Poyzes in fine Golde, beſides his part in Siluer: and euery Footeman had a quarter part leſſe then the Horſemen. Yet notwithſtandinge, this great treaſure, the one fifte parte of *Atabalibas* raunſome was not deliuered: and becauſe that *Don Diego* brought with him a great company of men, there was alleaged y^t vnto them did not appertaine any portion of the raunſome of *Atabaliba*, for why? they were not at the takinge of him priſoner: yet the Gouernour commaunded to giue vnto

euery of them a thousand poyzes toward their cost. And determined to send his brother *Hernando Pisarro* to certifie the Emperour of his procedings and good successe, and because the true account was not yet perfectly knowen, he sent vnto his maiestie 100000. poyzes in gold, & 20000. markes of plate, contayning fiue ducates to euery marke out of the whole stock: Which present was wrought in sundry sort of vessell according to the Indian vse, whereof some were great vessels for water or wine, called Tinages, chafingdishes, drummes, shæpe, figures of men and women, all wrought in the forsayd mettail.

With the said portion *Hernando Pisarro* toke shipping with great griefe of his departing frō *Atabaliba*, who loued him excedingly, and also discouered vnto him much of his secretes, and sayde vnto him at his leaue takinge, O good captaine goe you now away: Truely your departure is greuous vnto me, for when you are gone, I shal be slaine by this one eyed man, and this he spake by *Don Diego de Almagro*, who had but one eye, as before hath beene declared.

Likewise he liked not the iesture of *Alonso Requelme*, who was Treasorer for his maiestie. And truely, poore *Atabaliba* iudged right, for as sone as *Hernando Pisarro* was departed, his death was conspired by meane of his Interpreter, who was named *Philip*, and was so called, because he had beene in Spayne with the Gouernour, who most falsely accused his Prince, saying ỳ hee was minded to murther secretly the Spaniards, and for that purpose, he had appoynted in secrete places a great number of Indians, and where the information was made by ỳ mouth of *Philip*, who interpreted the witnes sayinges, according to his owne pleasure. But the cause of his wicked dealing was not certainly knowen, but it was iudged to be one of two causes, which were, the one was thought that he was in loue wt one of *Atabalibas*, wiues, thinkinge by his death to enioy his desire without peril:

of

of which his pretence, *Atabaliba* had vnderſtanding, and therof had made complaint to the gouernor, ſaying ỹ that ſhameles aſcent greued him more thē his impriſonment, or yet any other miſhap ỹ might come vnto him, although it were preſēt death, to ſee ſo baſe a man, & his ſubiect enterprize ſuch villany, knowing ỹ great puniſhmēt in his coūtrey prepared for ſuch an offence, which was to burne aliue any that ſhould attempt ſuch things. The man being an offender was not alone thus puniſhed, but alſo the woman, her father, mother, brethren and kindred, yea, euen the cattel of the aduouterer, and the town where he or ſhe were borne, was deſtroyed & made vnhabitable, & the ground ſowed with ſalt, the trees cut down, and the houſes beaten flat with the ground, & other grieuous puniſhments were deuiſed in remembrance of the offence.

Others held opinion that the chiefe cauſe of *Atabaliba* his death, was the exceeding couetouſnes of *Don Diego de Almagro*, and alſo of his men, becauſe it was told thē that they had no right to haue any ſhare of al ỹ raunſome of *Atabaliba*, which they thought vnpoſſible to be perfourmed, although all the gold in the world were gathered together. Vpon which occaſions, the ſoldyars of *Don Diego* deſired the death of *Atabaliba*, ſaying, that as long as hee ſhould liue, the Gouernors men would ſay, that al ỹ gold which ſhould come to their hands was his raunſome, and they ſhould not be partakers thereof. But be it as may be, they condēned him to death, wherat the poore Prince was not a litle amazed, ſaying that he neuer thought nor imagined the things which were layd to his charge, and for the verifying of the matter, that it might pleaſe him to lay more Irons on him, with greater garde, or to cary him abord one of their ſhippes til the trueth were thorowly knowen. Hee ſayd, moreouer, to the Gouernour and the chiefeſt of hys companye. I know not for what cauſe yee doo iudge mee, for a man of ſo ſmall iudgement, or to thinke that I would goe about to work

treason, considering how I am your prisoner, and bound in Iron chaines, and also if any of my people should but shew themselues for any such purpose, yee might them with the least suspition, strike my head from my shoulders. And if ye thinke that any of my subiectes should come to rescue me against my will, ye are also deceaued, and know not what obedience my people beareth vnto me, for against my will the fowles of the ayre shall not flee, nor the leaues of the trees stirre.

All these allegations preuayled not, nor yet to geue great gages for the life of ỳ basest Spanyard that should perish in the land. But sith it was thought among the Spaniards that it was not a lawfull cause to condemne him to death vpon suspicion, they charged him with the death of his brother *Guascar*, whereupõ they gaue iudgement of death, and executed the sentence. But before his death he stil called for his frend *Hernando Pisarro*, who was gone toward Spayne, saying, if he had beene here I should not so wrongfully be put to death. And at the hower that he should die, he was baptized by the Bishop.

How *Ruminagui* made insurrection in the Prouince of *Quito*, and how the Gouernour went to *Cusco*. chap. 8.

THe Captaine in whom *Atabaliba* had put in his life time a great trust, as in the former Chapter is declared, and how he fled from the battaile in Caxamalca, with 5000. Indians: He (I say) being in the Prouince of Quito, gathered together al the Indians of *Atabaliba*, and possessed himselfe of the estate of that Countrey, compelling them to obay him as their right and only Lord. *Atabaliba* a litle before his death sent his brother *Illescas* to Quito, to bring vnto him his children, which *Ruminagui* most vnnaturally caused to be slayne.

When

When *Atabaliba* ſaw, that of force hee ſhould die, hee earneſtly deſired certaine of his Captaines, to ſee his body caried to the Prouince of Quito, to be buried with his Father *Guaynacaua*, the which requeſte, they faithfully perfourmed, and whē the dead body was brought to Quito, *Ruminagui* receiued it with great honour, and buried him with his Father, with great pompe and ſolemnitie, according to the cuſtome of the Countrey: and when the Funerals were ended, he cauſed a great drunken Feaſt to be made, in the which, when the Captaines that had brought the dead body were throughly drunke, hee commaunded them al to be ſlaine, among whom was *Itleſcas*, Brother to *Atabaliba*, who had his ſkinne plucked of beinge aliue, and with the ſame ſkin, hee couered the endes of a Drum, and his head hanging at the ſame Drumme.

In this meane while, the Lord Marques, Gouernour, deuided all the Golde and Plate in Caxamalca, and when he had ſo done, he had aduice how one of *Atabalibaes* Captaines called *Quixquix*, went vp and downe in the countrey, ſtirring the Indian People to inſurrection, wherupon he determined no longer to abide, nor yet to tarry his cōming in the Valley of Xauxa: hee alſo ſent before him Captaine *Soto*, with certaine of his Horſemen, and hee him ſelfe went in the Reregard.

In the Prouince of Viecaſinga, the Indians came ſodainly vpon Captaine *Soto*, in ſuch ſort, that hee ſtoode in perrill of the ouerthrow, & foure of his men were ſlaine: but the day beeing ſpent, the night forced them to ceaſe, and to retire to the Mountaines. The Gouernour hearing of this great daunger of Captaine *Soto*, ſent *Don Diego de Almagro* to ſuckcour him, with certain Horſemen, ſo that the next morning, the Indians comming agayne to ſkirmiſh, the Chriſtians made as though they would fly, to allure the enemies downe into the Playne, out of the daunger of the high places, from whence they did much hurt with their Slinges: But the Indians ſuſpectinge

the pollicye of the Christians, retired backe againe, and kept their skirmishing neare the Woodes, not knowing of the succour which was come, because of the great myst which did fall that morninge, they could not discry their cōming, by meane whereof, the Christians had the victory, and slew many of the enemies. Then came the Gouernour with the Reregard, at whose comming, came a brother of *Guascar*, and *Atabalipa*, who was chosen *Inga*, or King of the Land: by meane of their deathes, he had receiued the great Tassell, which was as much as to saye, as the Crowne of the Princely estate, and was called *Paulo Inga*, who certified the Gouernour, how in the cittie of Culco attended his cōming a great number of men of War: with this newes he letted not, but proceeded forwarde by his ordinary Journeyes, vntill hee came in sight of the Cittie, out of the which he saw assend a marualous smoake, by meane whereof, hee iudged the Cittie to be on fier, & to the intent to preserue the same, he sent with all speede a company of Horsemen, but they were no sooner comen neare the cittie, when a great number of Indians came out to encounter with thē, with slinges and sundry other sortes of weapons, in such sort, that the Spanyardes were glad with all haste possible to retire, aboue the space of a longe League, where they met with the Gouernour, who vnderstandinge what had hapned, sente from thence his two Brotherne, *Ihon*, and *Gonsalo Pisarro*, with the most of the Horsemen, who set vpon the enemies on the Mountaine side, with such courage, that they caused them to retire, and in their flight slue many of them, vntill the night compelled them to cease. The Gouernour seeinge the good successe, gathered his army togeather, and the next day thinkinge to haue had resistance in his entrye into the Cittie, hee found not one man, to withstande him, so that hee and his companye entered peaceably, where hee aboade at pleasure.

Twentie daies after his abode in Culco, came newes, how

how *Quixquix* had a great Army, wherwith he did great hurt, robbing & spoyling in the Prouince of Condesuyo: wherupon the Gouernour sent Captaine *Soto*, with 50. Horsemen, to disturbe his proceedinges: whose comming beeing knowen to *Quixquix*, hee durst not abide, but with all speede, fledde toward Xauxa, thinkinge there to finde some small company of the Christians, whom hee might easely subdue, who were such as had remained behinde to keepe the Fardage, and the Kings portion of treasure, which was at the charge of *Alonso Requelme* Treasorer.

But the Spanyards hauing aduise of his pretence, although they were but fewe, who in effecte attended in Xauxa, for the purpose aforesaid, did so valyantly defende his enterprise, that his desire toke no place, but rather was forced to passe forwarde the highe waye towardes Quito.

When the Gouernour had intelligence of ỹ dealings of *Quixquix*, hee sent after him againe, Captaine *Soto*, with his company of Horsemen, and after him hee sente his Brotherne, who generally followed him aboue a hundred Leagues, and coulde not ouertake him: wherupon they returned agayne to Cusco, where they had as great a praye of Golde and Plate, as before they had in Caxamalca: the which the Gouernour deuided amonge his Souldiers, and began to inhabite the Cittie, which was the head and Princely seate, of all the whole countrey of Peru: and so continued a long space among the Christians: hee also deuided the Indian People among the new Inhabitantes, which there determined to abide, for there were many of his men that were not willing to remaine there, but rather to returne into Spayne, to enioy the Treasure which they had gotten, both in Cusco, and Caxamalca.

How Captayne *Benalcaſar*, went to the conqueſt of *Quito*. chap. 9.

HEre before in this Hiſtory, hath bene declared, howe at the time when the Gouernour came into Peru, hee inhabited the Cittie of Saint Mighel, in the Prouince of Tangarara, neare vnto ỹ port of Tumbez, for the only intent that such as should come frõ Spaine, might haue a sure and safe Roade, or harbor for their ships: hee now considering that the number of his Horse were but few, which hee left there, after the taking Prisoner of *Atabaliba*: hee sent for his Deputie from Caxamalca to Saint Mighell, Captaine *Benalcaſar* with ten Horses, at which time came many Indian *Canares*, to make their cõplaint against *Ruminagui*, and his people saying, that daily they were by them molested with cruell War. At the same seasõ were many men comen from Panama & Nicaragua, so that when Captaine *Benalcaſar*, had heard of the iniuries of the Indians of Quito, hee chose 200. of those freshmen, wherof was 80. Horsemen, & with them he toke his Iorney toward Quito, aswel to defend the *Canares*, as also for the great fame of Golde that was thought to bee in those partes, in the Treasury of *Atabaliba*, when *Ruminagui* had vnderstanding of the comming of Captaine *Benalcaſar*, hee came and encountered with him in manye daũgerous passages, with ỹ number of 12000 Indians, & also had many priuie snares made to intrap ỹ Christiãs, in the high wayes: which pollicies *Benalcaſar* did preuent with great diligence, for in the night season he sent 60. or 70. horsemen, to assure his way, either aboue or beneath ỹ accustomed high wayes, which was ordinarily done before the morning, so ỹ with this industry, ỹ enemy was forced to retire into the plaines, where they durst not abide the battaile, for the great spoile which the horsemen made among them but if by hap they staied in any place,

it was where their vſuall ſnares were betweene them and the chriſtians, which were great holes made in the groũd, ſticked ful of ſtakes, couered ouer with a falſe couering of graſſe, ſtraw & ſand, or els with turues which was ſo wel handled, that wt great difficultie thoſe ſnares could be diſcouered, and might wel be compared to thoſe which Cæſar wryteth in his ſeuenth commentary, which the people of Aexia deuyſed for the defence of their citie. But notwithſtanding all their inuentiõs, they could not deceiue *Benalcaſar*, & his chiefe pollicie was, that alwayes he would be ſure not to giue any onſet, where the Indians ſhewed countenance to expecte his comming, for there was alwayes the ſnares ordeyned: But rather he would goe and compaſſe them about 2. or 3. leagues to aſſaulte them on their backs, or ſidewiſe, with great aduiſe, not to paſſe vpon any greene thing that might ſeeme counterfaite.

But now the Indians ſeing their practiſes woulde take no place, they deuiſed another practiſe, which was, they hauing vnderſtanding, or at the leaſt ſuſpecting, which way the Chriſtians would paſſe, made certayne heales in the ground, of the breadth of a horſe foote, & ſomwhat deepe, not much diſtant one from another, pretending by this pollicie to breake their horſe legs. But yet their deuiſes could not preuail to deceiue *Benalcaſar*, who ſtil proceeded on, conquering as he went euen to the principal cittie of Quito, where hee had aduertiſement how *Ruminagui* had ſayd vnto his wiues (which were many) now ſhall you haue your deſire and pleaſure, for ỹ Chriſtians whom ye loue are at hand, with whom yee may take your repaſt. But thoſe poore wẽches thinking that he had ſpeaken thoſe words in meriment or ieſt, laughed at his ſayings, which laughter coſt them deere, for with meere ieſtcuſe incontinent he commaunded their heades to be ſtricken from their bodies, and when he had executed this cruell acte, he determined to flee, and forthwith

he set on fyer a wardrops which was ful of rich princely ornaments, which sometime did belong for the ordinary apparel of *Guaynacaua*. When these his venemous factes were ended, he fled and in his flight hee gaue a sodaine assault vpon the Spaniards, but no hurt done, so that now entred Benalcasar, and tooke quyet possession of the Citie.

In this meane season, ỹ Lord Marques, Gouernor, sent *Don Diego de Almagro* to the new citie of S. Michel, & there to take information of certaine newes which was certified vnto him, which was, how *Don Pedro de Aluarado*, Gouernour of Guatimalla, had taken shipping to come into Peru, with a great power both of horsemen and footmen, to discouer Peru, as more at large shall be declared in the next chapter.

Don Diego de Almagro came to the citie of S. Michel, without hearing any further newes of that matter, but he had vnderstanding how *Benalcasar* was in the siege of Quito, and of the resistance of *Ruminagui*, whereupon he determined to goe succour him, and accordingly tooke that iorney in hand, which was 120. leagues from saint Michel. And when he was come to Quito, he tooke all *Benalcasars* men, and ioyned them with his army, with whom he conquered certaine townes, which vntill his comming would not yeld, but when he saw that ỹ great treasure of gold which he expected, could not be found, he returned toward Cuico, leaving Captaine *Benalcasar* for Gouernour of Quito, as he was before his comming.

How *Don Pedro de Aluarado* came into Peru, and what followed. Chap 10.

After that *Don Hernando Cortez*, Lord Marques of the valley of Huaxacac, had conquered and pacified the new Spayne, hee had vnderstanding of a countrey adioyning thereunto, called

Guatimala

Guatimala: for the diſcouery thereof he ſent one of his captaynes called *Don Pedro de Aluarado*, who with ỹ company which he had with him did conquere and winne the ſame, with great peril and danger: And in recompence of his paynes taken, the Emperour his maieſty gaue vn to him the gouernment of the ſame countrey. Frō whēce he had intelligence of the Prouince of Peru, whereupon he beſought his Maieſtie, to graunt vnto him ſome parte of that diſcouery, which according to his requeſt was giuen vnto him, with the conditions accuſtomed for diſcouerers. By vertue of which graunt vnder letters patents, he ſent a Gentleman of the towne of Cafarez, called *Garcia Holguin* with two ſhippes to diſcouer the coaſt of Peru, at whoſe returne bringing newes of the greate quantitie of golde which *Don Francisco Piſarro* had obtayned in his diſcouery, he determined perſonallye to take that iorney in hand, and whileſt that *Don Francisco* was occuppyed in his affayres in Caxamalca, he imagined that he might eaſily proceede beyonde his iuriſdiction, vpon his pretended diſcouery, and take poſſeſſion of the Cittie of Cuſco, which in his iudgemente did ſtand without the limittes of the 250. Leagues of ground, diſcouered and graunted in gouernment to *Don Francisco Piſarro*, and to bring the better his purpoſe to effect, he feared leaſt ſuccour might come from Nicaragua, to the Gouernour, wherupon on a night he ſayled to Nicaragua, where hee tooke by force two great ſhippes which were there rigging, to effect, that when they were trimmed, they ſhould paſſe a company of men and horſes to the gouernour *Piſarro* in Peru. In which ſhippes, and in his owne which he brought from Guatimalla, he embarked 500. horſemen and footmen, and with them ſayled til he came to ỹ coaſt of Puerto Viejo, and from thence hee tooke the way to Quito by land, in ỹ paralell of ỹ Equinoctiall, along ſome part of the plaines among thickets, called Arcabucos, in which iorney they paſſed extreme neceſſity of victualles,

as well of meate as drinke, which would haue bene much greater, if by good hap they had not met and fallen into a ground of great Canes, whose propertie was, that cutting any of them at the knot, they found the hollow full of swæte water, exceeding good & holesome. Those canes are ordenarily as big as the calfe of a mans leg, so that betweene two knots of ech cane was found a pottle of fresh water. They hold opinion the particuler propertie of those canes is to gather water by attraction of ỹ dewes which dayly fall in the night season, by meane whereof, although the sayd plaines are drye without any kinde of Springs, yet with this succour of water the campe of Don Pedro was wel comforted, aswel men as horses, yet notwithstanding their hunger was such, that they were forced to eate many of their horses, although eche horse was worth by iust valuation in that countrey, 5000. castelins in gold. And as they went on their iorney, the most part of that low way, there rayned hote ashes vpon thẽ, which afterward was knowen to come out of a Volcan which is not far from Quito, out of the which proceedeth such a marueylous fyer, that lanched out ashes and imbers aboue 80. leagues compas, and sometimes the noyce & thundering that came from thence, was heard a hundred leagues of.

Canes of fresh water.

Volcan.

In all the townes and villages which Don Pedro passed through vnder the Equinoctial Line, he found great plentie of Emeraldes, and after he had passed so troublesome wayes, whereof in many places hee and his men were forced to make way by force of hand, he then came vnto a leine of hilles couered wt̃ snow, where it snowed continually with an exceeding colde, through the which he was driuen to passe, where with the extremitie of cold dyed aboue sixtie of his men, although as many as were of his cõpany, put on their bodies all the apparrel which they had, to passe that extremitie of colde, yea they made such hast, that none of them would tary one for another, nei-

A perilous passige.

neither to comfort nor helpe them: so that it hapned that a Spanyard who carried his wife & two daughters with him, and seeing them tired with wearines, and that hee could neither succour nor yet carry thē away with him, hee hauinge his harte kindled with paternall loue, abode with them, where as they al foure were frosen to death, and although, he mought wel haue escaped, yet the loue of his wife and children was so great, that he rather desired to die, than to depart from them. So that to conclude, with this great daunger, the Captaine with his Armie passed these snowy Mountaines, holding them selues for most happy, whē they saw them selues on the other side, and gaue God praise, with excædinge ioyful hartes: and although the Prouince of Quito is inuironed with high Mountaines couered with Snow, yet notwithstandinge in the middest are temperate valleyes, both fresh & pleasant, where people inhabit, and haue plenty of corne.

An example of true Loue.

At that instant, was so great a thaw of the snow of one of those mountaines, that the water which procæded out of that snow, came downe with so great a furye, that it drowned a towne called Conciega: the force of this water was so marualous, that it draue stones bigger than any Pilstone downe with the streame, with such facilitie as if it had bæne of Corke.

How Don Diego de Almagro, met with Don Pedro de Aluarado and what passed betweene them. Chap. 11.

BEfore hath been declared, how Don Diego de Almagro hauing left for Gouernor in Quito, Captaine Benalcasar, and not hauing perfect newes of the comming of Don Pedro de Aluarado into Peru, hee returned vnto Cusco, in which iorney, he wan certain Fortes & fortresses, where the Indians had lodged them selues for their safetie, in which affaires he was so long time occupied, ỹ Don Pedro had time to aland his men, and came into the Prouince of Quito, before Don Diego had therof intelligēce, by mean

of the great distance of way which is betweue these places, and also where no towne of contractation is, neither of christians nor yet of Indiãs. As he went on a day conquering the prouince of Liribamba, he passed ouer a mighty riuer with great peril, for ẏ Indians had brokẽ down the bridges, so that he was forced to wade ouer in the shallowest place that he could finde, and when he was comen ouer he found ready to receiue him a great nũber of Indians men of war, against whom the victory hee had obtayned with great difficultie: for their wemen did great hurt, w̃ slings: yet not withstanding the Indians had the ouerthrow, & their Casicke was taken prisoner, who certified Don Diego that Dõ Pedro de Aluarado was 15. leagues from thence, besieging a fort, wherin was an Indiã captaine called Sopasopagui. Whẽ Don Diego had vnderstanding of these newes, forthwith he sent seuen horsemẽ to discry his camp, but their fortune was to be taken prisoners by Don Pedro his men: notwithstanding hee released them againe, & came with al his power and pitched his campe within fiue leagues of the Real of Don Diego, with determinate intent to breake with him, & to take frõ him both his men and countrey. When Don Diego saw the great aduantage that his enemie had, he determined to returne to Cusco, with only 25. horsemẽ, and to leaue the residue with captaine Benalcasar for to defend ẏ countrey. At this instant the Indian Interpreter, called Philip, of whom mention hath bẽne made, who was the only cause of Atabalibas death, & fearing punishmẽt for the same, he fled from his master, and went vnto Don Pedro, he also caryed with him one principal Casicke, and priuely conserted with Don Diegos army, that when hee sent for them, they should pas vnto Don Pedro his side. Whẽ Philip was come to Don Pedro his presence, he offered to put into hys handes al that countrey in quyet possession. He aduertised him also that Don Diego was retired vnto Cusco, & moreouer he said, that if it would please him to apprehẽd him, he might now doe it with great facilitie, for (quoth he) he hath but 250. men, of the which are 80. horsemen. Don

A traitor.

Pedro

Pedro geuing credit to the false Interpreter, forthwith began to direct his way toward *Don Diego*, whō he found in Liribamba, with determination to die in the defence of the countrey. *Don Pedro*, in like maner, set his company in good order, & with spred ensigne was in readines to gene ỹ onset. But *Don Diego* hauing but few horsemen meant to resist his encounter on foote: whereupon he deuided his men into two quadernes, wh̄ the one was captaine *Benalcasar*, and he himselfe had the other: And in this order being in sight one of the other, there began a parle of peace, and for that purpose to stay the battel for one day and a night, in which meane time, the Licenceat *Caldera* toke vp the matter betweene them in this sort: that *Don Diego de Almagro* should pay vnto *Don Pedro de Aluarado* 100000. poyses of gold for his shippes, horses, and all other furniture of his nauy, and that they should both goe frendly together to visite the Lord Marques *Pisarro*, and that there the payment should be made. This agræment was accepted, and also kept in great secret: For if *Don Pedro* his men had vnderstode these dealings, among whom were many gentlemen, some tumult might haue rysen, considering that the remuneration of their seruice was not spoaken of, the premises considered, & proclamation was made that they should trauell in vniformitie of company together, in such sort that *Don Pedro* his naue should continue on his nauigation along the sea coast, proceding on his discouery, & that al his men should be at liberty, either to abide vnder captain *Benalcasar* at Quito, or els to go wh̄ their general by sea, cōsidering ỹ now they were all linked in peace, brotherly loue, & cōformity: Wh̄ this order was manifestly knowē, many of D. *Pedro* his mē abode in Quito, & *Don Diego*, & Dō *Pedro* wh̄ al ỹ residue of their retinue came together to Pachacama, where they had knowledge ỹ ỹ gouernor *Pisarro* was come frō xauxa to receue thē. The night before *Don Diego* departed from the Prouince of Quito, he burned aliue the Caseike that fled frō him, and the like had bene done to Philip the interpreter, if *Don Pedro* had not intreated for him.

100000 poizes for agreement.

Iustice.

How Don Diego de Almagro, & Don Pedro de Aluarado met with the Cascike Quixquix, & what passed betweene them. Chap. 12.

DON Diego and D. Pedro going on their iorney from the prouince of Quito toward Pachacama, ẏ Cascik of the Canares enfourmed thē how Quixquix who was some time a Captain appertaining to Atabaliba, was cōming toward thē wͤ an army of 12000. Indians men of war, & that daily his hoast increased: But (quoth he) if ye wil abide his comming, I wil deliuer him into your handes: Unto whose words Don Diego gaue no credit, but proceeded on his iorney, and would not tarry their cōming, so ẏ when they were come to the Prouince of Chaparra, they espyed about 2000. Indians which were come about two dayes iorney before their Generall Quixquix, vnder another Captaine called Sotaurco, because Quixquix vsed alwayes this pollicie in the way as he went, to haue ẏ said Captaine alwayes in his vaūtgard, and on his left hand he had likewise 4000. Indians who gathered victuals in al the villages as they passed: he also vsed in his reregard other 3. or 4000. Indians, who followed one daies iorney behind the rest, and Quixquix went in the midst with ẏ body of the host, with their cattel & prisoners, so that his whole army did alwayes occupy 15. leagues in circuit. And wheras Sotaurco his meaning was to haue taken a passage that he thought the christians of force should pas, to which place Don Pedro was come before him, wher he took him prisoner, & of him had vnderstāding of al Quixquix his pretēce, wherupō on a night he prepared an ambush of horsemen, although he could not so soon bring his purpose to passe, because he was forced to stay the shooing of his horses, who had passed a perilous way of rocks and stones, by reason whereof they were vnshooed, So that leauing his pretended ambush, he made al hast possible til he came within sight of Quixquix his camp, who whē he had espyed the Christians, he toke another course

with

with his wiues and ſeruile people, and he placed a bro-
ther of *Atabaliba* called *Guaypalcon*, with the chiefeſt of
his ſoldyers in another part which was very aſperous,
ſo that he went to encounter with *Don Diego de Almagro*,
going vp a hil, hauing his horſes welnigh tired with the
troubleſome way which he had paſſed, and with much adoe
leading them by their bridels, they came to the hill top:
They alſo receaued great hurt with the ſtones which ỹ
enemies rolled down the high hilles vpon thē: notwith-
ſtanding, at the length, the chriſtians enuyroned *Guay-
palcon*, who ſeeing himſelfe ſo beſeged on euery ſide, hee
then fortifyed him and his company on the top of a high
cragged rock, where he ſtoode to his defence vntil night,
at what time *Don Diego* and *Don Pedro* ſounded the retire
for their ſoldyers: and the Indians with the darknes of
the night came from their hold to ſeeke their Generall
Quizquiz. Afterward was knowen how the Indians 14. Spany-
on the left winge had ſlaine and cut of the heads of riiii. ardes, be-
Spaniards which they had taken at aduantage, & proce- headed.
ded on their way til they met with the reregard of *Quiz-
quiz*, The Indians made them ſtrong at the paſſage of a
ryuer, ſo that all one day they ſuffered not ỹ Spaniards
to paſſe, but forced thē to ſeeke another way, which was
toward the mountaines, where the Spaniards meant to
haue taken a high hil, but they receaued great damage in
their pretended purpoſe, for when they would haue re-
tired, the cragged and troubleſome way was their hyn-
derance: by meane wherof, many were wounded, eſpeci-
ally, captaine *Alonſo de Aluarado*, who was thruſt through
the thighe, and another Knight of the order of S. *Iohn*, ſore
wounded: all that night the Indians kept good watche,
but in the morning the paſſage was left cleare, that the
Chriſtians might paſſe at eaſe, & the enemy driuen into
the Mountaine, where they reſted in peace. *Don Diego*
would no longer abide, but procéded on his iorney: all
the ſtuffe whi ỹ the Indians could not carry with them
they burned, leauing behinde them about 15000. Shæpe,

and 4000. men and wemen, which yælded themselues to the Spanyardes, hauing bæn prisoners vnto *Quixquix*.

When the Christians were come to S. Michel, *Don Diego de Almagro*, sente *Diego de Mora* to Puerto Viejo, to receaue to his vse the Nauy of *Don Pedro de Aluarado*, who on his behalfe sent to that effect, *Garcia de Holgun* to make deliuery of the same accordingly: & afterward *Don Diego* in the citie of S Michell, prouided aswell his owne men, as *Don Pedro* his men, of all furniture necessary for the warres, and the like of money & apparrel: this don, they toke their iorney toward Pachacama: and in the way as he went, he left inhabited the citie of Trugillio, in the gouernment of Captaine *Martine Astete*, according to the order of the Gouernor *Don Francisco Pisarro*.

In this meane while, *Quixquix* cõming nere vnto Quito one of ỹ Captaines appertaining to Captaine *Benalcasar*, gaue the ouerthrow to his vauntgarde, & therby put him in such an agony, that he knew not what to doo: & moreouer his Captaines of greatest trust, perswaded him to yæld to *Benalcasar*: but in recompence of their counsel, he threatned them with the reward of death, & cõmaunded that they should prepare them selues to retire, but his men not hauinge furniture of victuals for their returne, his Captaines ioyned togeather, and toke for their chiefe tame *Guaypalan*, who in the name & voyce of all the rest, saide vnto him, that it were much better for thẽ to die in fight with christians, than to perrish with hunger in the retire into places vnhabited: Vnto which sute & request, *Quixquix* gaue a lowring answere, wherupon *Gnaypalan* strake him to ỹ hart with his Launce, & incõtinent came other of his captaynes, who with clubs & hatchets made him into peeces, & than the souldiers scattered thẽ selues some one way, & some another, euẽ at their own pleasure.

How the Gouernor paid *Don Pedro de Aluarado* the 100000 poyzes for the agrement, and how *Don Diego* would haue (perforce) bin receiued Gouernor in the Cittie of *Cusco*.

Chap. 13.

When

When Don Diego & Don Pedro were come to Pachacama, the gouernor who was come thither frō Xauxa, receiued & entertained thē ioyfully, & also according to agreement, paid vnto Don Pedro the 100000 poyzes, in ready gold, for his Nauy brought from Guatimala, although there were many ý perswaded him to stay the payment, alleaging that the fleete was not worth so much money, no, nor yet the one halfe of the said sum, & that the former bargaine was made by Don Diego with feare, cōsidering that Don Pedro had great aduauntage of him, and there now he mought do wel to apprehend him, and sende him prisoner to the Emperors Maiestie. And although the Gouernor might haue taken that councell, and also haue brought it to passe accordingly without perrill: yet hee chose rather to ratifie & performe the worde & promise of his freend Don Diego de Almagro, & notwithstandinge the councel of his captaines, he made present paiment of the 100000 poyzes in good gold, & than permitted him quietly and frendly to depart, & to passe vnto his gouernment of Guatimala, & he himself abode, and toke order for the habitacion & citizens of the citie of the Kings, & brought frō Xauxa ý dwellers there, to inhabit the said citie, because it seemed vnto him a singuler place of contractacion, and exceding holsome for mans health. From this citie departed Don Diego de Almagro, with a great company toward ý citie of Cusco, & the Gouernor went to reforme the buildings & other things in the citie of Trugillio, & to make reperticion of the ground among the citizens: In this meane season came newes, how Don Diego de Almagro ment to possesse ý citie of Cusco to his only gouermēt, because he had receiued aduertisemēt, by Hernando Pisarro how ý Emperor had graūted vnto him the gouernment of one 100. leagues of groūd, beyond the limits of the gouernmēt of Don Francisco Pisarro: which according to hers say, did not extend so far as Cusco, but against this opiniō & possession, both Ihon Pisarro, & Gonsalo Pisarro, the Gouernors bretherne, did not only speake against, but also resist wᵗʰ many of their frends, which daily came vnto thē

and

and also when the matter came in question in the counsel house of the Citie, among the principallest of the Cittizens, the greatest number holde with the Gouernour, *Pisarro* and his Bretherne.

When the Lord Marques had perfecte relation of the proceeding in Cusco, he forthwith toke his iorney thither by poste, so that with his presence, al controuersies were ended, & pardoned *Don Diego* of his offence, who was not a litle amazed, because he had intermedled in so waighty a matter, with iust title or prouision from his Maiestie, but only with the newes of heresay, he presumed to take the Office vpon him: so that now againe they confirmed their former freendship & company, with this condicion, that *Don Diego de Almagro* should go to discouer the countrey, toward the South sea: & if hee should finde the lande fruitful and to his content, that then he would make sute to the Emperour, to graunt vnto him the gouernment therof: And if it happened that hee could not finde any soyle to his content, that thē the land vnder the gouernment of *Don Francisco Pisarro*, should bee equally deuided betweene them both: And vpon this conclusion, eache of them made a solemne othe, at the communion of the holy sacrament, to perfourme the couenantes made betweene them: & furthermore, at the same communion time, *Don Diego* pronounced these wordes, saying: Lord, I beseech thee than, when I breake this oth before thee made, that than thou confound mee body and soule. When these thinges were done, *Don Diego* began to prepare thinges necessary for his iorney, with 500. men, which he had vnder his charge, and the Lord Marques returned to the citie of the Kings, & sent *Alonso de Aluarado* to conquer the countrey of the Chachapoyas, which standeth distant 70. leagues from Trugillio, among the Moūtaynes: in which conquest, both hee and those which went in his company passed great misery and troubles, vntil they had pacified, & inhabited the countrey, for whose paynes the Gouernment of that Conquest was giuen vnto him.

A solemne othe.

THE

¶ THE THIRD BOOKE, fol 45. containeth the Iorney that Don Diego de Almagro made into Chili, and of thinges that hapned in the meane season in Peru, and how the Indians rebelled.

How Don Diego de Almagro tooke his iorney toward Chili. Chap. 1.

DOn Diego de Almagro, departed on the discouery of his conquest, with whō went 570. horsemen and footmen, well prouided of al furniture necessary: yea there were some citizens that left their houses & repartitiōs to goe with him. He sent before him Iuan de Sayauedra, borne in the cittie of Ciuil in Andoluzia, with 100. men, who in the Prouince which afterward was called Charcis, met with certain Indians which came from Chili, not knowinge what had passed in Peru, to geue their obedience to Inga, & to present him with certaine wedges of fine gold, which wayed 150000. poizes: which pray he tooke, and also was determined to haue taken Gabriel de Rojas, who had the charge of iustice by the appointment of the Gouernour Pisarro, & hauing vnderstanding of his pretence, fled to the cittie of Cusco, and Don Diego with all his power proceeded on his way, at the time when Mango Inga, who sometime had the state and crown of Peru, departed from Cusco, as before hath bin declared, he (I saye) agreed wō his brother called Paulo, & with another called Villaoma, who was high priest among thē Indians, which two persons of authority, with a great number of the Indian people, went in company with Don Diego, that when hee thought him selfe in most securitie, they should set vpon him, to murther both him and al his retinue, and concerning the gouernor who abode in Peru, he would also take the like order to dispatch him, and his army: at ỹ time of this conclusion, Inga commaunded to sow the ground,

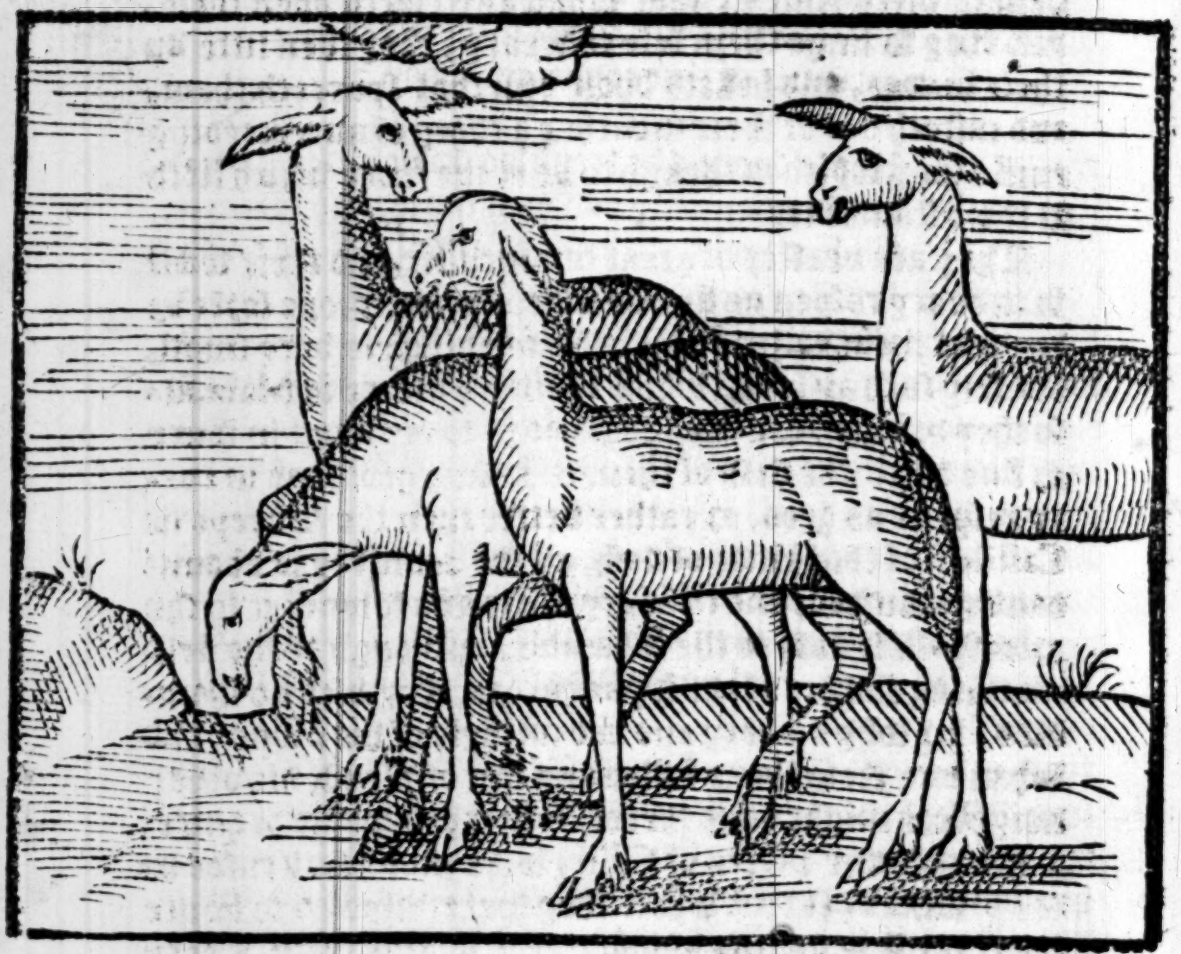
that victuales might not want when time should require, of which prouision the Spanyardes had no vnderstanding. But when *Villaoma* could not bring his purpose to effect at Charcas, he came flying to Cusco. And when *Don Diego* was entred into the Countrey of Chili, Philip the Interpreter (who was priuie to all the conspiracie) fled likewise, howbeit hee was taken by certaine Spanyardes that followed him, and aswel for this treason, as the other that he committed in Quito: the Gouernour commaunded his body to be cut in quarters, who at the time of his death, confessed that hee was the only cause of the vniust death of *Atabaliba*, only to haue his wife at his commaundement, as before hath beene rehearsed. And as *Don Diego* was occupied in the conquest of Chili, a seruant of his named *Iuan de Herrada*, ouertoke him, be it was that his said master had left in the citie of the kings, to gather more soldyars for his seruice in the discouery, who brought vnto him a prouision, which *Hernando Pisarro* had brought out of Spayne for him, by vertue of the which, the Emperour had made him Gouernour of one hundred Leagues of ground, beyonde the borders and limits of the iurisdiction and gouernment of *Don Francisco Pisarro*, the which office and gouernmente was called in the letters patentes, new Toledo, for the Precincte of *Don Francisco* his Jurisdiction was named, new Castile. But now *Don Diego* iudging that the cittie of Cusco did fall within the compasse of his Regiment, without any respect of his former othe which hee so solemnly had made, hee determined to cease and leaue of the discouery which hee had in hand, and to returne to take into his possession the Citie of Cusco.

Iustice.

Of the troubles which Don Diego de Almagro passed in his iorney toward Chili, and of some other particularities of that countrey. Chap. 2.

GReate were the troubles which Don Diego and his company passed in the iorney toward Chili, aswel with hunger and thirst, as also with encounter of Indians, which were mightie great men of groweth. Also there were in some places excæding good archers, who were clothed in Zeale skinnes: But the extreeme colde did much annoy them, aswell the bitter sharpe aire, as the frost and snow, & also the passage ouer the mountaines, which were couered with snow, where it hapned that a captaine called *Ruydias*, who followed Don *Diego de Almagro*, had many of his men and horses frozen to death, for neither their apparrel nor armour could resist the excæding sharpnes of the aire, which did so vehemently penetrate and freese them. The extremitie of this cold was such, that at the end of fiue moneths, when Don *Diego* returned toward cusco, he found some of his cõpany which had followed outward, frozen to death, standing on their feete, leaning vpon the Rockes, and holding their horse bridels in their hands: and their horses likewise frozen to death, as fresh without corruption, as though at that instant they had dyed.

The carcases of which horses was a great relefe for his men at his said returne, for want of other victualles, and after they were past the extremitie of cold, thẽ came they into such a wildernes, without any kinde of habitation, where they foode in as great a nœde of water to drinke, so that their chiefe remedy was to carrye with them from the snowy hilles, shæpes skinnes full of water, in such sort, that euery fiue sheepe carryed on his backe, the Skinne of an other dead Sheepe full of water.



Among diuerse properties, which the Sheepe of Peru haue, one is, the strength of their ordinarye burden is halfe a hundred waight, and many times three quarters of a hundred, being laden vpon them as Cammels vse to carry their ladinge, and are in makinge much like vnto Cammels, sauing that they want the knop on the backe: The Spanyardes hath now brought them to such purpose, that they will carrye a man also in a rode Saddell, foure or fiue leagues a day, and when they feele thē selues weary, they vse to lye downe, and will not rise againe although they should bee beaten neuer so much, or lifted vp with strength vpon their feete, yet they will not goe one foote further except they bee vnladen: And it happeneth

peneth often times, that whan any rideth vpon them, and they fælinge them ſelues weary, they then lifte vp their heades, and laieth vpon him that ſporreth them, and caſteth out of their mouthes a thing of an exceeding euill ſauor, which is though to be of the foode which lieth in their ſtomackes.

They are beaſtes of great commoditie, and their woll is in euery reſpect as fine as ſilke, eſpecially, one ſorte or kinde of them, called Palos: their fædinge is very ſmall, chæfely ſuch as labor, whoſe ordinary meate is Maiz, alſo they drinke very ſeldome (that is to ſay) once in foure or fiue daies: the fleſh of them is paſſing good, and in euery reſpecte as good, or rather better then the Sheepe in Caſtile: of this kinde of fleſh, all the countrey is abundantly prouided, and in euery Citie and towne, it is the principalleſt fleſh in the Shambles, although at the firſt comming thither of the Spanyardes, they vſed no ſhambles: for why? euery one had cattayle of his owne, and whan one Neighbour killed any ſort of Beaſt, his other neighbors might haue therof, what they would require.

In certaine places of Chili, were many Abſtruſes in the Plaines, ſo that when they were diſpoſed to hunte them, the Spanyards would ride poſt after them, & very ſeldome could ouertake any, although their flight was on their fæte, runninge and hoppinge: and although their bodies were hugie and waighty, yet with their leapes, a good horſe runninge neuer ſo ſwifte, could very ſeldome out runne them.

There are alſo many running Riuers, which runneth in the day ſeaſon, & at night not a whit, which is a thinge to be noted, and eſpecially, among them that vnderſtand not the reaſon therof: which is, that in the day time the ſun melteth the ſnow and Yſe of the mountaines, ſo that the water that commeth from thoſe high hilles in the day maketh great Riuers, and at night all remaineth frozen againe. But after we paſſe 500. leagues along the coaſt, & come into 30. degrees, on ỳ other ſide of the Equinoctial 30. degrees.

toward the Southward, there is plenty of rayne, and also al windes as ordinarily do blow, as it doth in Spaine, and other places Eastward. All the countrey of Chili, is inhabited, and hath aswel plaine ground as mountaines, and by reason of many crekes and bayes, which are in the sea coast of this lande: so that sayling North and South, requireth sundry windes. Chili standeth in 40. degrees, as is saide, North and South, from the Cittie of the Kinges, till you passe to the saide 40. degrees in altitude: the countrey is very temperate, and hath Winter and Sommer in due season, accordinge to the qualitie of Castile, and their North Starre is in comparison like vnto ours, sauinge alwayes hee is accompanied with a litle white clowde: this starre according to Astronomers opinion, is called Pole Antartike, and hath also not farre from him the crosse starres, with other three more, that followeth him in their order, and mouinge so that there are seuen starres ý attendeth on that North star, which differ not much from ours, which the sayd Astronomers call Triton, sauing that the fourth which are toward the South, standeth crossewise, and are ioyned nearer together than ours: our North star also is cleane out of sight: within 200. leagues of Panama, comming directly vnder ý Equinoctiall Line, where at one instant, is easely seen both those Tritons, or north starres, Artike, & Antartike, although a great space from the Pole Antartike, sœmeth most playne the foure crosse starres: by the mouinge wherof, the Sea faringe men do kœpe their reckoninge, & whan they come to 30. degrees, then all the other three starres serue for their purpose.

Note.

In this countrey of Chili, the daye differeth from the night, and the night from the day, according to the course of the yeare, as it doth in Spayne, although not by the same times.

In the Lande of Peru, and in the Prouince of Tierra firme, and also in al other places there adioyninge to the Equinoctiall,

Equinoctiall: the day and night is equall throughout all the yeare: and if at any time in the cittie of the Kinges, the daye or night increaſe or diminiſhe, it is ſo ſmall a thing that it can not eaſely be decerned.

The Indians of Chili, goe apparelled like vnto the Indians of Peru, both men and wemen are of a good ſtature, and fæde ordinarily of ſuch meates as thoſe of Peru.

Beyond Chili 38. degræs from the Line, are two greate men of power, which maintaine alwayes war, the one againſt the other, and eche of them is of power to bringe into the Fælde 200000 men of war: the one was named *Leuchengorma*, which is Lord of an Iland, which ſtandeth two leagues from the firme land, dedicated to his Idols, in which Iland ſtandeth a great Temple, wherunto appertained 2000 Præſtes.

The Indians of this Leuchengorma, informed the Spanyardes, that 50. leagues beyond that place, betwæn two Riuers, was a great Province, all inhabited with wemen, which conſente not to haue any ſorte of men among them, except a certaine time conuenient for generacion: and then if any happen to bee with childe, and bring forth men children, they are after certaine yeares ſent to their fathers, and the daughters which they likewiſe beare, remaineth with them: theſe wemen alſo are in ſubiection to *Leuchengorma*. The Quæne of theſe wemen is called *Guayboymilla*, which in their language, is as much to ſay, as Heauen of Golde, becauſe the reporte was, that great quantitie of gold groweth there, & therof they make exceeding ritch cloth, & of all their cõmodities, they paye tribute to *Leuchengorma*. And although oftentimes ỹ Spanyards hath had notice of this countrey, yet they neuer toke ỹ diſcouery in hande, becauſe *Don Diego* would not abide to inhabit in ỹ coaſt: & alſo ſithence that time, *Pedro de Valdiuia* was ſent to inhabit ỹ coũtrey, who could not bring his deſire of furniture to paſſe, cõuenient for ỹ voiage, although he hath inhabited 33 degræs beyõd the Equinoctial Southward, & alſo perfect knowledge of

Amazons.

Make.

habitation

habitation was knowen to bee vnto 40. degrées alonge that coast, especiallye, one shippe, which Don *Gabriell de Caruajall*, Bishop of Plazensia, sent in discouery, which had passed through the Straught of Magalanes, who from the said straite came sayling along that coast Northward, vntil he arriued at the port of the city of ỳ kings, and before the cõminge of this ship there was no memory of Rats found in all Peru, so that it seemeth that ỳ first broode of Rats came out of that ship, & sithens that time, al the cities in Peru are replenished with abundance: it is thought that among chests and fardels of marchandize they were carried from place to place: wherupon the Indians do name them Ococha, which is to say, a vermine comen out of the sea.

Of the returne of *Hernando Pisarro* into Peru, and of the dispatch which hee brought with him, and of the rebellion of the Indians. Cap. 3.

After that Don *Diego de Almagro*, was departed from Cusco, *Hernando Pisarro* came frõ Spayne, hauing receiued at ỳ Emperors hand greate fauoure, who also made him knight of the order of S. James: He also brought for his brother Don *Francisco*, prorogation for certain leagues of ground in his gouernment. And also the prouisiõ which hath bæne spoken of, for the gouermẽt of Don *Diego de Almagro*. At this instant Mango Inga, Lord of Peru, was prisoner in Cusco, for the conspiracie which he had wrought against the Christians, with his brother *Paulo Inga*, and *Villaoma Almagro* wrote vnto *Iohn Pisarro* requesting him to set thẽ at libertie, because he was loth that *Hernando Pisarro* should finde them prisoners at his comming to Cusco, at which time *Iohn Pisarro* was in the conquest of Collao, and at the sight of his letter, they were discharged out of prison.

When

When *Hernando Piſarro* was come to Cuſco, he became a ſingular good freend to *Inga*, and vſed hym verie curteouſly, notwithſtandyng, he had alwaies regarde, to attende vnto hym. It was thought that this frendſhip was to the intent to craue ſome golde of hym for his Maieſtie, or els for hym ſelf. So that after twoo monethes that he was come to Cuſco, *Inga* beſought hym to graunt vnto hym leaue to goe vnto Yncaya, to celebrate a certaine feaſt, and in conſideration of his courteſie, he promiſed to bryng vnto hym an Image of golde, whiche was made in remembraunce of his Father *Guaynacana*, bothe in proportion and likeneſſe: the coueteous deſire of gold, cauſed *Hernando Piſarro* to graũt his requeſt. And when he was comen to Yncaya, he put in vre the conſpiracie whiche he had pretended ſince the tyme that *D. Diego de Almagro* departed from Chili, ſo findyng hym ſelf at the place where he required to bee: He began to murder certaine Miners that wrought in the gold Mines, and other houſdaunmen whiche were in the fieldes, he alſo ſent one of his Captaines with a greate nomber of his people, to take the Fortreſſe of *Cuſco*, the whiche his commaundement was doen accordyngly: ſo that in ſixe daies the Spanyards could ſcarcely winne the Fortreſſe againe, and at the winnyng thereof *Ihon Piſarro* was ſlaine in the night ſeaſon with a ſtone, whiche ſtrake hym on the heade, ſo that by the meane of an other wound whiche he had on his head, he could not ſuffer his head peece, his death was bewailed throughout the lande. And certainly the loſſe of his perſone was greate, becauſe he was a valliant manne, and well experimented in the warres of that countrey, and ſingularly beloued of all men. Death of Ihō Piſarro.

When *Inga* had intelligence of the death of *Ihon Piſarro*, he came with all his power vpon the citie, & beſieged it for the ſpace of eight Monethes and more: and at euery full Moone he aſſaulted the Citie on euery ſide, how be it *Hernando Piſarro* and his brethren defended his aſſaulte like valliant gentlemen, with many other Capitaines, and approued good Souldiars whiche were within the Citie, eſpecially *Gabriell de Rojas*, *Hernando Ponſo de Leon*, *Don Alanſo Henriquez*.

and the Treasorer *Requelme*, and many others, who vnarmed them selues neither daie nor night: and did assuredly beleeue, that the Gouernor and all the other Spanyardes were slaine by the Indians, because thei had knowledge that all the lande had rebelled, and were occupied in the warres. So that these valliant minded men fought so manfully, as men that expected no humaine succour, but onely put their truste in the helpe from GOD alone: although thei daiely deminished by the handes of the Indians. In the meane while that the warre and siege endured, *Gonsalo Pisarro* with other twentie horsemen came out of the Citie, to vewe the siege, and proceded forwarde till thei came to the Lake called Chinchera, whiche stoode fiue leagues distant from the Citie, where the enemies came so thicke, and thronged vppon hym, who, although he and his companie fought valliauntly, yet thei had yelded, if *Hernando Pisarro* and *Alonso de Turo*, had not resrued them with an other companie of horsemen, because *Gonsalo* had entered too farre emong the enemies, whiche he did with greater courage then wisedome.

How *Don Diego de* Almagro came with his power vpon Cusco, and tooke prisoner *Hernando Pisarro*. Chapt. 4.

HEre before hath been declared, how *Iuan de Herrada* caried into the prouince of Chili, to *Don Diego de Almagro*, the prouision which the Emperor had graunted to hym, conterning his newe gouernation, whiche did extend beyond the limites of *Dõ Francisco Pisarro* his graunt, whereupon he determined to returne, from his pretended discouerie of Chili, and to take the Citie of Cusco into his power: to whiche purpose, the gentlemen whiche were in his cõpanie encouraged hym, to make all the hast possible, especially *Gomes de Aluarado*, brother to *Don Pedro de Aluarado* and his Uncle *Diego de Aluarado*, and *Rodrigo Orgonios*: emong whom, some desired the reparation of the Citie and Countrey, and other coueted to bee alone in the gouernation

of

of Chili, ſo that to bryng this matter to paſſe, they deuiſed to cauſe their interpretars to proclaime, that *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, and all his companie of Spanyardes were ſlaine by the Indians whiche had rebelled, who had likewiſe vnderſtandyng of the rebellion of *Inga*. So that now *Don Diego* tooke this enterpriſe in hande, and when he was come within ſixe leagues of Cuſco, without giuing knowledge to *Hernãdo Piſarro* of his commyng, he wrote to *Inga*, promiſyng to pardon all that was paſte, if he would become his freend, and aſſiſt hym in his pretended purpoſe, alledgyng moreouer, that all the lande appertainyng to Cuſco, was within the precinct of his gouernement, wherefore his meanyng was to poſſeſſe the ſame. But *Inga* deceiptfully ſent hym woorde, that he ſhould come perſonally and talke with hym, and ſo he did, with ſuſpition of ſome deceipte: wherefore he lefte ſome of his meme with *Iuan de Sayauedra*, and tooke the reſte with hym. But when *Inga* eſpied tyme conuenient, he ſette vppon hym with ſuche a vehement courage, that *Don Diego* was glad to retire. In the meane ſeaſon, *Hernãdo Piſarro*, hauyng knowledge of his commyng, went to viſite *Iuan de Sayauedra* at his Campe, and mought haue taken hym priſoner if he had would, as the Citezens of Cuſco had counſailed hym to doe, but he would not, rather when he had ſpoken with hym, he retourned backe vnto the Citie, without the giuyng vnto him of any vngentle language. How be it, *Iuan de Sayauedra* reported afterward, that he had offered vnto hym 5000. poyzes in gold, to deliuer into his power all the men whiche were in his companie, and that he refuſed the money. When *Don Diego* was retourned from *Inga*, he came with all his armie in the ſight of the Citie with his Enſignes ſpread, where he tooke fower horſemen, whiche *Hernando Piſarro* had ſent to talke with hym, he alſo ſent to require the ſtate and Cheef Magiſtrates of the Citie, to receiue hym for their gouernour accordyng to the Emperours letters Patentes graunted to hym, whiche were ready to bee ſeen. The ſaied Magiſtrates made anſwere, ſaiyng: that he ſhould cauſe the limittes of his graunt to be meaſured with *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, and whē

it should be verified that the Citie of Cusco, should fall out of the league of grounde, specified in the graunt of *Don Francisco*, then would thei yeelde to his requeste, and also obeye hym, as reason and duetie should require. But their wise and gentle aunswere was neuer performed: By meane whereof after did followe suche greate damage, slaughter, and discorde, betwene these twoo valliaunt Captaines: and although sundrie tymes thei mette to measure by line the lande, that should appertaine to eche of them, yet thei neuer agreed vpon the cause: For sometymes thei would saie that the leagues of lande, appertainyng to the gouernation of *Don Francisco*, should bee measured a long the Sea coste, acceptyng into the reconyng all Creekes, Bayes, and croked heade landes, or Capes. Others helde opinion that the measure should bee by lande, acceptyng likewise into the accompte all croked waies, whiche of force were to bee gonne almoste circular, and not directly straight. So that by eche of these twoo reconynges, the gouernement of *Don Francisco* did finishe a greate waie, before thei could come to Cusco: yea some saied, before thei could come to the Citie of Kynges. But *Don Francisco* pretended that their opinions were not iuste, nor lawfull in that forme of measuring: but rather saied he, that thei should measure according to the rules of the altitude of the Sunne, allowing the due nomber of leagues to euery degree, beginnyng at the Equinoctiall line, accordyng to Astronomers reconyng in the Northe and Southe course, by the superior line, and in so doyng the Citie should fall into the iurisdiccion of *Pisarro*. But bee it as maie bee: for as yet vntill this daie the matter was neuer agreed vpon, that is to saie, whether the Citie of Cusco doeth fall into the newe Castile, or in the newe Toledo, although sundrie tymes, bothe Pilotes and learned Geometricias hath met to decide the cause, especially the Licenciall *Vaca de Castro*, who had a perticular Comission touchyng that matter, and as yet sentence was neuer pronounced. But now letting this discord ceasse, & returnyng again to the Historie.

Hernando Pisarro, sent woorde vnto *Don Diego* that he would prepare a certaine parte of the Citie, for hym and his retinewe

retine we to lodge in, and in the meane while he would aduertiſe his brother *Don Franciſco*, of his demaunde: who at that inſtaunt was abiding in the Citie of the Kyngs, to the intent that ſome order might be taken betweene them, conſideryng that thei were bothe freendes and companions: And to treate of this matter, ſome doe affirme, that truce was taken vpon that condition, ſo that vnder that concluſion, eche one held him ſelf to be in ſecuritie. *Hernando Piſarro* cauſed that night all the Citezens and menne of warre, to take their reſte in their houſes, becauſe thei were greatly wearied with watchyng, and wearyng their armour daies and nightes, without takyng any reſt at all.

When *Don Diego* had aduiſe of the Citezens reſte and ſecuritie, and the night beyng verie darke, eſpecially through a darke Clowde, whiche at that inſtaunt couered the Citie, he forthwith aſſaulted the Citie. But when *Hernando* and *Gonſalo Piſarro* heard the noiſe, thei made greate haſte in arming them ſelues, and their houſe beeyng the firſt that was aſſaulted, thei like valliant gentlemen defended them ſelues, vntill thei had ſet fire on euery ſide of the houſe, whereupon thei yelded, and were in this order taken priſoners.

The next daie followyng *Don Diego* compelled the counſaill of the Citie, to receiue hym for their cheef ruler and Gouernour: and alſo commaunded *Hernando* and *Gonſalo Piſarro* to be put in Irons, yea and many of his councellers wiſhed hym to put them to death, the whiche councell he refuſed conſidering the noble courage and minde, whiche thei ſhewed in the defence of their houſe, ſo that thei were put in the cuſtodie of *Diego de Aluarado*. Alſo it was credibly thought that certaine Indians were the occaſion, that *Don Diego* did breake the truſe that was made, and alſo ſome Spanyardes, who brought newes vnto hym, that *Hernando Piſarro* had commaunded to breake downe the bridges, and the Fortreſſe in the Citie, whiche newes ſeemed to bee the verie originall cauſe. For when *Don Diego* entered into the Citie, he ſpake theſe woordes with a loude voyce: Oh how haue ye deceiued me with your deceiptfull newes, for here I finde bothe bridges,

ges, and euery thyng whole and sounde.

Of all these proceadinges the Gouernor *Pisarro*, knewe nothing, nor many daies after the takyng of the citie, and imprisonment of his brethren *Don Diego de Almagro*, made *Paulo* brother to *Atabaliba* kyng, & gaue vnto him the Tassal of the Empire, the which newes being knowne to his brether *Mango Inga*, he fledde with a greate nomber of his people into certaine asperous Mountaines called *Andes*.

How the Indians slue many that the Gouernor sent to succour his brethren in Cusco. Chap. 5.

EMong other thynges whiche the Gouernour *Don Francisco Pisarro* sent to craue of the Emperour, he besought his Maiestie in remuneration of his seruice doen in the conquest of Peru, to graunt hym 20000. Indians perpetually to hym & his discendentes, in a Prouince called Atambillos, with their Rentes, Tributes, and Jurisdiction, with title of Loyde Marques of that place and people. The Emperour answered, that as touchyng the Indian people he would take aduisement, and also of the qualitie of the Countrey, and what profite or damage thereof might growe: and that in consideration of his seruice, he would so gratifie hym as lawfully with reason he should thinke conuenient, so that at his request the title of Loyde Marques was graunted, and the Emperor commaunded that from thence forthe he should be so called. And therefore hereafter in the prosecution of this Historie we will call hym by the name of Loyde Marques.

The Loyde Marques hauyng vnderstandyng of the rebellion of the Indians, and not thinkyng the matter would haue come to suche extremitie, he began to sende succour of men, to his brother *Hernando Pisarro*, to Cusco, by little and little as he could gette them, by tenne, and fiftene at a tyme. The Indians also hearyng of this weake succour, appointed many men of warre to attende their commyng at euery dangerous passage that was in their waie, so that as many as the Loyde Marques sent in this order, were as fast murdered

by

by thoſe Indians, whiche thyng would not ſo haue fallen out, if he had ſent them all together. And as he went to viſite the cities of Trugillio, and ſainct Myghell, he determined to ſende one *Diego Piſarro*, with 70. horſemen, to the ſuccour of his brethren, al the whiche the Indians ſlue at a ſtraight paſſage, whiche of force thei ſhould goe, and at this daie is called the hill of Parcos, whiche ſtandeth fiftie leagues from Cuſco: and the like happened to the Marques his brother in Lawe, called *Gonſalo de Tapia*, who he ſent afterward with 80. horſemen: thei alſo put to the worſe Captaine *Morgonjo* and Captaine *Gaete*, with their cõpanies, yea, fewe or none of them eſcaped: ſo that thoſe which alwaies followed laſt, could haue no knowledge of the ſucceſſe of thoſe which went before. And an other policie the Indians alſo vſed, which was, thei would let them paſſe, till thei came into a Valley betweene twoo Hilles, and then would thei enuiron them bothe before and behinde, and from the high places came the ſtones as thicke as haile, beeyng throwne with ſlynges in ſuche ſorte, that thei ſlue many of them, before thei could come to hande ſtrokes. So that thei ſlue aboue 300. horſemen, and tooke from them greate quãtitie of Jewells, Armour, and apparell of ſilke.

300. horſemen ſlaine by the Indians.

Now the Marques hauyng no aunſwere from none of thoſe ſuccours, he ſent *Franciſco Godoy* borne in Caceres with 45. horſemen, who by chaunce mette with onely twoo men, whiche had ſerued vnder Capitaine *Gaete*, and eſcaped from the tyranny of the Indians: ſo that by them he had intelligence of all that had paſſed, whereupon he returned with all ſpeede, although he was almoſte taken in the ſnare of his fellowes, and was followed by the Indians aboue twentie leagues, and daiely by them encountered before, and in the rereguarde: So that he was forced to trauaile in the night ſeaſon, for feare of the multitude of enemies. And whē he was come to the Citie of Kynges, whither alſo was comen Captaine *Diego de Aguero*, with certaine men that had eſcaped the Indians rage.

The Marques had vnderſtandyng, how a greate nomber of the Indian enemies followed Captaine *Aguero*, whereupon

vpon he sent *Pedro de Lerma* with 70. horsemen, and many Indians his freendes, to encounter with the Souldiars of *Inga*: with whom thei fought almoste a whole daie, vntill the enemies were forced to take a high Rocke for their holde and sauegarde. Whereunto the Spanyardes laied siege on euery side: the same daie captaine *Lerma* had his teeth broken with the stripe of a stone, and also nine of his men were wounded, and one horseman slaine. But the Christians draue them into so greate an extremitie, that if the Marques had not commaunded them to retire, thei would that daie haue ended the warres: because the Indians were in extreame miserie shutt vp in their fort, and no waie to helpe them selues. So that the Spanyardes also seeyng theim selues free from the tyrannie of their enemies, thei gaue vnto God moofte hartie thankes, and thus doen thei remoued their Campe vnto an high hille, that standeth not farre from the Citie of the Kynges, daiely skirmishyng with the enemies.

The cheefe Captaine of the Indians was called *Tysoyopangui*, and the brother of *Inga*, which the Marques sent with Captaine *Gaeto*, in these warres whiche the Indians attempted nere the Citie of the Kyngs: it happened that many Indians who were seruauntes to the Spanyardes called *Yanacunas*, serued the Indians of the warres in the daie season for wages, and at night came to their supper and lodgyng with their maisters.

¶ How the Marques sent into diuers parties to requier succour, and how Captaine *Alonso de Alnarado* came to aide hym. Chap. 6.

THe Lorde Marques seyng suche a greate nũber of Indian enemies in redinesse, for the besiging of the citie of the Kinges: he then thought assuredly that *Hernando Pisarro*, and all his companie in Cusco were slain, and that the insurrection and rebelliõ was generall through the lande, thinkyng also that *Don Diego* had the like successe in Chili. And because the Indians should not thinke, that with feare he kept

his

his Nauie of shipps, to flie in them when neede should require. And also that the Spanyardes should not haue hope of succour to repaire to the saied shippes, to escape out of the lande, and by that meane to fight with lesse courage, then manhoode should require, he commaunded the shippes to bee sent from thence to Panama. He sent also messengers to the Uiceroye of the newe Spaine, and to all the Christian gouernours of all the Indies: crauyng their fauor and helpe, aduertisyng thē of the great danger that he was in. Signifiyng the same with woordes, not of suche courage as he was wont to shewe in other thynges. But it should seeme that his so doyng, was through the perswation of some faint harted persone, whiche councelled hym so to doe.

The policie of a good Captaine.

He sent likewise to his lieutenant of Trugillio, cōmaunding hym to leaue the Citie without people, and to embarke their wiues, children, and goodes in a ship which he sent for that purpose, that thei might be conuayed to the firm lande, and he with all the rest of the citezens to come with their horses and armor to aide him. Because he thought assuredly that the Indian enemies would come and spoile their Citie, and he not able to defende them. So that he iudged the surest waie to bee, to ioyne them selues together in one bodie: yet he required that their cōming should be in secret. Whē thinhabitātes of Trugillio were ready to depart towardes the Marques, came thither Captain *Alonso de Aluarado* with all his companie, who was come frō the discouerie of Chachapoyas, beyng also sent for, by the Marques, and hauyng lefte a certaine companie of men of warre in the Citie of Trugilio, for the sauegarde of the same, thei came al together to the Citie of the Kynges to aide the Marques, who louyngly entertained them. And incontinent made *Alonso de Aluarade* captaine generall, in lue of *Pedro de Lerma*, who vntill that tyme had enioyed that office, yet the vnplacyng of hym was so greeuous vnto hym, that afterward it caused Mutynie, as in place and tyme shalbe declared.

When the Marques sawe him self so well prouided of men, and other surniture necessarie, he determined to succour, where moste neede should require. Wherupon he sent captaine *Alonso de Aluarado* with 300. Spanyardes, footemen and horse-

men to discrie the coũtrey: who proceding on his iourney about 4 leagues from the citie, in Pachacama he had a sharpe battaile with the Indians, of whom he had the victorie, and slue many of thẽ: this doen, he tooke the waie toward Cusco, in whiche iourney passyng thyrough the countrey vnhabited, he suffered great penurie, and onely for wãt of water, died aboue 500 of his Indians with thirst, who were labourers and caried his bagage, and if the light horsemen had not been, who roade by poste with certain vessells for water, whiche was the meane to saue the liues of a greate nomber mo of the footemen, whiche were all in danger of thesame ende. As he in this maner proceded forward, he ouertooke in the prouince of Xauxa *Gomes de Tordoya*, naturall *de Villa Nueua de Barca Rota*, who had in his companie 200 footemen and horsemen, so that thei were now in nomber 500 men, with whom *Alonso de Aluerado* tooke his waie to the bridge called Lumjchaca, where the Indiãs had enuironed them on euery side, & hauyng their battaile together, the Christians had the victorie, yet thei ceassed not skirmishyng vntill thei came to the bridge called Aban cay, where *Alonso de Aluarado* had vnderstanding of the imprisonment of *Hernando* & *Gonsalo Pisarro*, and of all the affaires which passed in Cusco, so that he determined to procede no further, vntil he should haue further Commission from the Marques. When *Dõ Diego de Almagro* had notice of the cõmyng of *Alonso de Aluarado*, he sent vnto hym *Diego de Aluarado* with other seuen horsemen, to notifie vnto hym the prouision graunted by the Emperor. Who at their commyng *Alonso de Aluarado* tooke them prisoners: saiyng, that the Lorde Marques ought to be cited with their prouisions, & not he who was no partie for suche matters. But when *Don Diego* sawe that his messengers returned not againe, fearyng least *Alonso de Aluarado*, ment to enter into Cusco by some other waie.

About xv. daies after he came with his whole power, determinyng to set vpon *Aluarado*, because he vnderstandyng how *Pedro de Lerma* had practised a Mutinie, for to passe vnto him with 80 men, and when Don *Diego* drewe nigh to *Aluarado*, his scoute, toke prisoner *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, who was a

light

light horsman to *Aluarado*, who hauing intelligence of his imprisonment, was minded likewise to apprehēde *Pedro de Lerma* vpon suspition: who fled from him the same night, carrying with hym the fines of all those, whiche had promised their faithe and freendshipe to *Don Diego*.

On a night *Don Diego* came to the bridge, hauyng knowledge how *Gomes de Tordoya*, and a some of the Coronel *Vilalua*, were tariyng his commyng, who had sent ouer at a shallow place many of the men, whiche were of the cōspiracie with *Pedro de Lerma*, who were encoraged to passe the water without feare. It was manifestly knowē, that some of the conspirators, who watched that night had stolne aboue fiftie Lances, whiche they brought awaie with them. So that when *Alanso de Aluarado* was minded to haue attempted the battaile, he founde the conspirators missyng, and many moe of his men whiche went to seeke their Lances, that were stollen from them in the night watch, were also wanting: by meane wherof *Don Diego* obtained the victorie without bloudsheding, sauing that *Rodrigo Orgonios* had his teeth broken with the stripe of a stone. Now whē the spoile was deuided, & *Aluarado* taken prisoner, *Don Diego* returned to Cusco, where he shewed some bitternes of crueltie to his prisoners, yea and so exalted him self in pride, that he letted not to saie, that in short space he would not leaue one of the name of *Pisarro* to stūble at in all the dominion of Peru. He said also, that the Marques might goe rule emong the Manglarez, whiche dwell vnder the Equinoctiall line, if he list to gouerne.

Pride hath a fall at length.

How the lorde Marques tooke his iourney to Cusco to succour his brethren, and hearyng of the ouerthrow of *Alonso de Aluarado*, he retourned backe to the Citie of the Kynges. Chapt. 7.

With the victorie whiche *Alonso de Aluarado* had obtained against the Indiās, as soone as he was departed frō the citie of the Kynges toward Cusco, as well in Pachacama, as in Lumychaca, as before hath been declared, *Inga* and *Tisoyopanguy* were glad to retire frō the siege of the Citie of the Kynges. Wherevpon the Marques seyng hym self

at libertie, and with a greate companie of men at his commaū-dement, he determined to take his iourney towarde Cusco, to succour his brethren: and carried in his companie 700 horsmen and footemen, thinkyng that his aide should haue been against the Indians onely. For he knewe nothing of the returne of *Don Diego de Almagro* from his discouerie, nor yet of any thyng whiche had happened.

Many of his souldiars which he caried with hym, were sent vnto hym by *Don Alonso de Fuen Mayor* Archbishoppe, and ioyne President of the Iland of Santo Domingo, with his brother *Diego de Fuen: Mayor* brought like wise a certain nomber of men from Panama. And also *Diego de Ayala* was returned from Micaragua with an other companie of men. So that the Marques proceadyng on his iourney, vntill he came to the plaines in the Prouince de Nasca, whiche standeth distant 25. leagues from the Citie of the Kynges, where he had newes of the returne of *Don Diego* from his discouerie, and also of all other perticularities whiche had happened, since his commyng, as before at large hath been rehearsed: the greef of those proceadynges, moued his pacience not a little, yet notwithstandyng, he considered, that his armie was furnished to fight with Indians, and not armed to warre with Spanyardes. Wherefore he determined to returne backe againe to the citie of the Kynges, to encrease his power with more men: and to accomplishe his pretence, forthwith he put in vre his returne. Sēding vnto Cusco, the Licenciat *Espinosa* to take order in the pacifiyng of the broiles whiche were begun, and to enforme *Don Diego*, that if the Emperor should knowe of the discord that was happened betweene them, that then he would sende an other to take the charge from them bothe, and enioye the lande whiche thei had gotten with suche greate trauaill and perilles. The Marques also desired hym, that whē he could not make any lawfull agreement betweene theim, yet at the least that it might please *Don Diego* to sette his brethren at libertie, and he to abide in Cusco, and not to proceade any further, till the matter should bee consulted, and the Emperour to explane and declare, what ech of them should quietly gouerne and possesse.

With

With this Embaſſage, the Licenciat *Eſpinoſa* departed on his iourney, how bee it, he could not bring to paſſe any of thoſe thinges, whiche were committed to his diſcretion. But whileſt he was dealing in the agrement, he fell ſicke and died. And *Don Diego* with his men, came doune to the plaines, leauyng in the citie, for his lieutenant, captaine *Gabriell de Rojas*, in whoſe power he left priſoners *Gonſalo Piſarro*, and *Alonſo Aluarado*, and caried *Hernando Piſarro* priſoner in his companie, and in this order he continued on his iourney, till he came to the Prouince of Chincha, whiche is within 20. leagues of the Citie of Rynges, and there he builte a Toune in remembraunce of his poſſeſſion of gouernement.

¶ How the Marques ioyned his armie, and how *Alonſo de Aluarado* and *Gonſalo Piſarro* ſcaped out of Priſon, and what other thinges happened Chap. 8.

When the Marques was returned to the Citie of the Rynges, he commaunded all his men to bee paide for their ſeruice, his armie multiplied by reaſon, that he gaue to vnderſtand how he ment, to goe to reſiſt and defende hym ſelf againſt *Don Diego de Almagro*, whs was comming to inuade his gouernation, ſo that in fewe daies his armie encreaſed to the number of 500. footemē and horſemen, among whom were many Hargubuziers, by meane that *Pedro de Vergara* was retourned from the diſcouerie of Bracamiros, and come in companie with *Diego de Fuenmayor*, who had brought frō Flaunders, where he was maried, a greate number of Hargubuziers with all furniture to them belonging, for vntill his comming, were but fiue in all Peru. Whereupon the Marques appointed for Captaines of the Hargubuziers, the ſaied *Pedro de Vergara*, and *Nunio de Caſtro*, and *Diego Vrbina*, borne in Ordonia, who was Nephewe to the Campe maiſter, he ordained Captaine of the Pikemen. He alſo appointed *Diego de Rojas* Captaine of the Horſemen, with *Poraufuerez* & *Alonſo de Mercadillo*, and now he named *Pedro de Valdiuja* Campe maiſter, and *Antonio de Vilalua*, cheefe Seriant.

In this meane while, *Gonsalo Pisarro* and *Alonso de Aluarado*, who remained Prisoners in Cusco, brake Prisone and came to the Marques with the number of fiftie persones, who had also taken Prisoner, *Gabriell de Rofas* Lieutenaunt of *Don Diego de Almagro*, with whose commyng, the Marques reioyced excedyngly, not onely because thei had escaped the perill that thei were in, but also their commyng was a greate encouragement to all his armie. So that now he appointed *Gonsalo Pisarro* Captaine generall, and *Alonso de Aluarado* Captaine of the Horsemen.

But when *Don Diego de Almagro* vnderstoode the skape made by his prisoners, and the mightie power of the Marques, he determined to come to some agreement with hym, yea, and he hymself to make the first motion. For which purpose, he sent with his full power and auctoritie, *Don Alonso Henriquiez*, and the Emperors Factor, called *Diego Nunez de Mercado*, & also the Auditor *Iuan de Gusman*, to deale with the Marques vpon some quiet conclusion. Who when thei were come to the Marques and declared their message, he was contented to put the matter in compromise in the handes of the reuerend father *Francisco de Bouadilla*, and *Don Diego* consented thereunto. Whereupon eache partie hauyng discouered his greefe, and made whole relation of eache cause: father *Francisco* hauyng indifferently vnderstoode the matter pronounced sentence, in the which he commaunded that first and principally, *Hernando Pisarro*, who was prisoner, should be set at libertie, and the possession of the Citie of Cusco, restored to the Marques as in his first estate, and that bothe their armies should forthwith be discharged, and to bee sent to discouer suche Countries as before that tyme was pretended: and that both parties should enforme the Emperour of all their proceedinges, to suche ende that his Maiestie might take order in their matters of discord. And that bothe the Marques and *Don Diego*, should come personally to talke the one with the other, and for that purpose, eache of them should meete at a Towne called Mala, and bring with eache of them 12. Horsemen and no moe: whiche Towne did stande in the midwaie of their two Campes. And vpon the pronouncing

of

of this ſentence, thei tooke their waie towarde the Towne of Mala, although *Gonſalo Piſarro* gaue no great credit to ỹ truce that was taken, nor yet to the woordes of *Don Diego*, wherevpõ he with the whole armie came after them, and ſecretly lodged his men neare vnto the ſaied Towne, commaunding Captaine *Caſtro* to laie him ſelf in ambuſhe in a certain Cane fielde with 40. Hargubuſiers, whiche was in the high waie that *Don Diego* ſhould paſſe: to the entent that if *Dõ Diego* ſhould bring with him a greater nomber of men then was agreed vpon, that then thei ſhould diſcharge their peeces againſt them, by whiche token he would alſo be readie with his companie.

¶How the two Gouernors mette, and how *Hernando Piſarro* was ſet at libertie. Chap 9.

When *Don Diego* departed from Chinicha, to go to the Towne of Mala with his 12. Horſemen, he left order with *Rodrigo Orgonos* who was his generall, that he ſhould be in a readineſſe, that if the Marques did happen to bring moe men then was agreed vpon, that then he to repaire with his armie, and that he ſhould vſe *Hernando Piſarro*, according as he ſhould ſee, how the dealing fell out at their meeting.

When theſe two Gentlemen met, thei embraſed the one the other very louingly, and after many woordes and muche talke had betwixt them, without any ſpeech of the principall matter, a gentleman appartaining to the Marques, came to *Dõ Diego* and tolde hym in his eare ſaiyng. My Lord get you hence with all ſpeede poſſible, for it importeth you ſo to doe, and I as your frende and ſeruitor, doe ſo aduiſe you. This warnyng he gaue vnto hym, becauſe he vnderſtoode of the commyng of *Gonſalo Piſarro*: *Don Diego* geuyng credite to his frendes woorde, called in haſte for his horſe, & when certaine of the Marques Gentilmen perceiued that he would departe, thei perſwaded their Lorde to apprehende hym, conſideryng he might eaſely doe it with the Hargubuzers, which *Nunjo de Caſtro* had in ambuſh. But the Marques would in no wiſe conſent thereunto, becauſe he had giuen his woorde to the contrarie, nor yet would not beleeue that *Don Diego* would returne, with out ſome order takyng

kyng betweene them.

And when *Don Diego* in the waie as he returned, espied the ambushe, then he gaue credite to the aduise whiche was giuen hym, and when he was come to his Campe, he complained of the Marques, saiyng that his meaning was to haue taken him prisoner, and by no meanes the Marques could not otherwise perswade hym. Yet notwithstandyng, by intercession of *Diego de Aluarado*, *Don Diego de Almagro* released *Hernando Pisarro* vpon certaine promises made betwene them, among the whiche, one was that the Marques should graunt vnto him a Ship and safe harber, to sende for dispatches which were come from Spaine for hym, and also vntill the Emperour had taken order in their discention, the one should not deale with the other: But *Rodrigo Orgonios* did withstande and speake against the libertie of *Hernando Pisarro*, because he knewe of vncurteous dealyng whiche was vsed against hym, in the tyme of his imprisonment in Cusco: Judgyng that when he should inioye his libertie, he would reuenge those iniuries receiued, so that alwaies his counsell was that his head should bee taken from his shoulders. But yet the opinion of *Diego de Aluarado* was of greater efficacie, hoppyng in the agreement that was taken.

Whē *Hernando Pisarro* was clearely released, *Don Diego* sent hym to the Marques his brother, accompanied with his sonne and other Gentlemen: he was no soner gone, when *Don Diego* repented hym of that whiche he had doen, yea, and it is thought that he would haue apprehended hym againe, if he had not made greate haste on his waie, euen vntill he met with many of the principall Gentlemen whiche serued the Marques, who were come to receiue hym.

¶ How the Marques proceeded against Don Diego, and how he returned towarde Cusco. Chap. 10.

When the agreement was made betwēne *Hernando Pisarro* and *Don Diego*, the Marques had receiued newe prouisions from the Emperor, whiche *Pedro Ansurez* had brought, wherein was conteined that eache of the gouernors should possesse and inioye the lande, which eache of them had discouered, inhabited and conquered at the tyme of the

the notifiyng of his Maiesties prouicion, although it were with in the limittes of the others gouernation, vntill his Maiestie should prouide in ẏ principall cause, what iustice should require.

So that when the Marques had receiued this order, after that his brother *Hernando Pisarro* was set at libertie, he sent to require *Don Diego* that he should depart out of that Countrey and Townes, whiche he had bothe discouered and inhabited accordyng to the Emperors commaundement. *Don Diego* aunswered, that he was readie to obaie the prouision & the contents thereof, whiche was: that eache of them should abide in the possession which thei were in, at the tyme when his Maiesties prouision should bee notified vnto them, or either of them. So that in like forme *Dõ Diego* required the Marques to obaie and obserue the same, and to suffer hym quietly to inioye his possession without warre or contention, with protestation to obaie any other determination or order, that his Maiestie hereafter should take in their discorde dependyng.

The Marques replied, that he first discouered, conquered, and inhabited, all the Townes, Cities, and Countrey of Cusco, and that by his wrong meanes and force, he was now dispossessed of proper right. Therefore once againe he required hym to leaue his former possession vnto hym, accordyng to the plaine meanyng of his Maiesties commaundement, for otherwise, he would compell him to auoide, willyng him also to consider, that the tyme of truce taken betweene them, was now exspired.

When the Marques sawe that *Don Diego* would not conforme hym self with the Emperors cõmaundement, but rather scan the plaine wordes of the prouision to his own will, he proceeded to giue hym battaile with all his power, and *Don Diego* retired as fast towarde Cusco, makyng hym strong in a high Mountaine called *Guaycara*, whiche laie in the waie as he wẽt, workyng all the pollicie and mischiefe whiche he could deuise, to spoyle the high waie for to hinder and disturbe the Marques passage. But *Hernando Pisarro* with a companie of men followed hym at the hecles, and on a night by a secrete waie he assended into the Mountaine, and with his Hargubuzeirs he ertercepted his waie, so that *Don Diego* was forced to flye: and

findyng him self some what euill at ease, he made the more hast leauyng in his Reregard *Rodrigo Orgonios*, who in good order continued the retire, and also hauyng vnderstandyng by two of the Marques companie whom he had taken prisoners, how the Marques followed with al hast possible, he also made the greater haste on his waie, although some of his Souldiars gaue him counsell to abide to encounter with hym, saiyng that all those which ascended the Mountaine, were the first daies as men that wer sea sicke. But this opiniõ, *Rodrigo Orgonios* liked not, because the gouernor *Don Diego*, had giuen him a contrary commission: Yet the Souldiers iudgement was holde among men of experience for the best waie, and would so haue fallen out if it had bin accepted, for truthe it was that the Marques company were those first daies, like men that were so sicke and farre out of order, with wearinesse of the passage through the snoe in the Mountaines: in consideration whereof, the Marques descended doune into the plaines, & *Don Diego* passed to Cusco, alwaies breakyng doune the bridges, and spoylyng the high waies as he went, thinkyng that the Marques had followed hym, and whẽ he was entred the Citie of Cusco, he abode there two monethes, ioynyng al his whole power and force of men together, trimmyng and settyng in good order his armor, munition, and all his furniture necessarie for the warres, he wrought weapõs of siluer and copper, and of the same mettall he cast Ordenance and sortes of Artillerie.

¶How *Hernando Pisarro* came to Cusco with his armie and fought the battaile at Salinas, and tooke *Don Diego de Almagro* Prisoner. Chap. II.

THE Marques with all his armie beeyng in the plaines, hauing descended from the Mountaines, he found among his Captaines sundrie opinions concerning their procedinges. But in fine it was concluded, that *Hernando Pisarro* should goe with the Hoste which was there in readinesse, for the Marques Lieutenant vnto the Citie of Cusco, and his brother *Gonsalo Pisarro*

Piſarro, to bee his Captaine generall, with title and voyce to execute iuſtice to certaine Citizens of Cuſco which were in his companie, who had made complaint of wrong that had bin done vnto them by *Don Diego de Almagro*, who had take their houſes, landes, and Indian ſlaues from them againſt equitie and right. In this ſoyte the armie marched on, and the Marques returned to the Citie of the Kinges, & his brother *Hernando Piſarro* by ordenarie iourneyes, came to the citie on an euenyng. all his Captaines deſired that thei might reſt that night belowe in the plaines. But *Hernando Piſarro* would not graunt their requeſt, rather he commaunded to pitche his Campe in the Mountaine.

The nexte morneyng followyng, *Rodrigo Orgonios* was attendyng his commyng with all his power in battaill araie, hauing for Captaines of his horſemen, *Franciſco de Chaues*, *Iuan Tellio*, and *Vincent de Gueuara*, and on the Mountaine ſide, he had certaine Spaniardes, with a greate nomber of Indians to aide them, and al the frendes & ſeruitors of the Marques which were in the Citie, were apprehended and kept priſoners in two ſeuerall partes of the Citie, who were ſo many and impriſoned in ſo narrow a roome, that many of them were ſtifled. The nexte daie following *Gonſalo Piſarro* and his men hauing made their praiers vnto God, deſcendyng from the Mountaine doune into the plaines, where he ordained his Quadrons and marched towarde the Citie, with intention to plante hym ſelf vpon a high plot of grounde that ſtandeth nere to the ſoyte of the Citie, thinkyng that *Don Diego* ſhould diſcrie his mightie power, that he would refuſe the battaile, the whiche was deſired for many conſiderations, and ſpecially the greate bloodſhed that was like to followe.

Notwithſtanding *Rodrigo Orgonios* was in the feeld with all his power and munition, attendyng the battaile, thinkyng that he could not bee damnified by any other waie, becauſe of a certaine Marſhe ground that was nere vnto them. But when *Hernando Piſarro* had vewed his enemies power: he cõmaunded captaine *Mercadillio* to be ready with his horſemen, aſweil to fight with the Indians if thei made any offer of fight, as to

succour the maine battaile, if neede required. So that now before the ioyning of the battaile, there begā a skirmish betweene the Indians of *Don Diego*, & the Indian freendes of the Marques. Then began the horsmen of *Pisarro* to passe the Marishe groūd, and in the meane while the Hargabuzers shot of against a Quadron of horsemen of *Don Diego* his side, with suche courage, that the horsemen retired. But when *Pedro de Valdiuia* Campe maister to the Marques sawe the retire, he assured thē of victorie on his side. Then was a peece of greate Ordenance shot from *Don Diego* his side, whiche slue fiue of the Marques his men. But when *Hernando Pisarro* had passed the Marishe ground, and a certain romping brooke, also, he went with good

deliberation to encounter with the enemie, aduertising euery Captaine what he should doe, at the time that the onset should be giuē, and with noble minde and courage he cherished and ēforted his men, and when he sawe the Pikemen of *Don Diego* in a readinesse with their Pikes, he commanded the Hargabuzers

zers to ſhote at the Pikes, ſo that with two dewes of ſhot, thei ſpoiled aboue fiftie Pikes. But when *Rodigo Orgonios* ſawe this, he commanded his captaines to giue the onſet, who were ſomewhat ſlowe in the obeyng of his commandement, wherevpon he hym ſelf brake forthe with the maine battaile towarde the left ſide, where he ſawe *Hernando Piſarro* like a valliaunt Capitaine before his Quadrons. And *Orgonios* went cryng with a loude voice, ſaiyng: O verbum diuinum, followe me, ye that liſte, for I goe to die. An vncomfortable Captaine.

When *Gonſalo Piſarro* and *Alonſo de Aluarado*, ſawe the traues, that *Orgonios* ſet forthe, thei brake in vpon the enemies, and at the firſt encounter threwe to the ground aboue fiftie mē: and when *Rodrigo Orgonios* came to the reſcue, he was woūded with the bullet of a Hargabuze in his forehed, which bullet paſſed through his hedpeece. And after that he was woūded, he ſlue twoo men, and thruſt with his lance a ſeruant of *Hernando Piſarro* in at his mouthe, thinkyng that it had been *Piſarro* hym ſelf, becauſe he was well armed, and gallantly attired. And whē bothe the armies were ioyned, the battaile was on bothe ſides valliantly fought, vntill at length the Marques his ſide had the better hand, and *Don Diego* his men began to turne their backes and flie, in whiche flight a nomber were ſlaine. But when *Don Diego* who ſtood on a high place to ſe the battaile, becauſe he was ſomewhat euill at eaſe, ſawe his men flie, he ſaied: By our lorde God, I had thought that we had come hither to fight. Then happened twoo horſmen to haue taken priſoner *Rodrigo Orgonios*, vnto whom came another, who had in tyme paſte receiued a certaine iniurie at his hande, and in reuenge of the ſame, ſtrake of his hedde. and in ſuche ſort were vſed other ſome that had yelded them ſelues, & yet *Hernando Piſarro* could not defende thē, although bothe he and his captaines did what thei might: and the cauſe was, that where the ſouldiars of *Alonſo de Aluarado* had receiued by them the affrent at the bridge of Aūcoy, thei now procured to reuenge by al the meanes that might be deuiſed. Yet the reuenge was ſuche, that where captain *Ruidiaz* caried one behinde hym, who had yelded hym ſelf, there came another, and ſlue hym with a Lance.

Whē *Dō Diego* saw his armie ouerthrowen, he went and lodged himselfe in the fortres of the Citie, where *Gōsalo Pisarro* and *Alonso de Aluarado* tooke him prisoner. The Indians seyng the battaill ended, thei left fighting also: so that the one and the other of thē went to strip the ded bodies of the Spaniardes. Yea, & some of them were not fully ded, but yet were also stripped naked: for by reason of their woundes, thei could not defend them selues from those that stripped them naked, and there was none to disturbe them, for the victors minded no other thing, but to follow the victorie: Yet bothe conquerers, and conquered escaped suche encounters, that it had been a very easie thyng for the Indians, to haue consumed them all, if thei had been of courage, seing the weakenesse that thei were in. This battaill was fought the 26. daie of Aprill 1538.

What passed after the battaill of Salinas, otherwise called Salt pit, and how *Hernando Pisarro* came to Spain. Chapt. 12.

When the battaill was finished, *Hernando Pisarro* tooke greate paines, to obtaine the loue and good will of the Capitaines, whiche had serued *Don Diego*, and remained aliue. And when he sawe that he could not bryng his desire to passe, he banished many out of the Citie, and seeyng that he had not possibilite, to gratifie those that had serued hym: For eche of theim did thynke, that if all the gouernement had been giuen hym, yet the paiment was not sufficient, wherevpon he determined, to deuide his hoste, and to sende his warriers to discouer the Lande, whiche he had knowledge of, wherein he brought to passe twoo thynges: The one, to remunerate his freendes, and the other to banishe his enemies. So that he sent Captaine *Pedro de Candia* with three hundred of his owne meune, whereof parte were of those of *Don Diego*, to take in hande a certaine conquest, whiche had fame of greate riches. And whereas *Pedro de Candia* hauyng taken the iourney, could not bryng his desire to passe, by meane that the waie was so asperous and troublesome, he retourned againe toward

Collao

Collao, with a Mutinie kindled emong his menne, becauſe one whoſe name was *Meſa*, who had been Capitaine of the Artillerie of the Marques, had ſaied that in deſpight of *Hernãdo Piſarro*, he would paſſe through the Prouince of Collao. But theſe wordes he ſpake by meane of the fauour and countenaunce of thoſe whiche had ſerued *Don Diego*, who were there preſent in the companie, becauſe thei being ouercome in the late battaile: yet their greefe remained ſtill in mynde. Whereupon *Pedro de Candra* ſent the ſame *Meſa* priſoner with the proceſſe and prouaunces whiche were made againſt hym, to *Hernando Piſarro*. Who vnderſtandyng that whileſt *Don Diego de Almagro* liued, the Countrey ſhould neuer bee in quiet, nor the people pacified, alſo aſwell in the proſes of *Meſa* as others, which *Hernando Piſarro* had made, he found mutynies in many places, and perſones coniured to that entent, whiche was to haue *Don Diego* out of priſon, and by that meanes to vſurpe the Citie. The promiſes conſulted, he thought conuenient to kill *Don Diego de Almagro*, iuſtifiyng his death with all his offences, whiche he had committed in the broyles and alterations paſt, alledgyng that onely he had been the arger and onely cauſe of the ſaied facte: and likewiſe how he was the firſt that brought men of warre into the Citie, and occupied the ſame by his owne auctho ritie. And moreouer, had ſlaine many that reſiſted hym, and likewiſe had come with an armie and Enſignes ſpred into the prouince of Chincha, which was manifeſtly knowen to be of the Marques gouernment. For whiche cauſes and conſiderations, he gaue ſentence of death againſt hym. But when *Don Diego de Almagro* hard the ſentence of death pronounced, he made a pitcous mone, and ſpake many dolefull and ſorowfull wordes to *Hernando Piſarro*, laiyng to his charge, how he was the onely cauſe that his brother and he were come to be exalted, and brought vnto the eſtate wherein thei now remaine: And had furniſhed them with money at the beginnyng, wiſhyng that he would remẽber how, whẽ he had hym priſoner in his power, he ſet hym freely at libertie without any rãſome, refuſing the coũſell of his captaines who perſwaded him to put hym to death. And if he had receiued any diſcurteſie in the time

of

of his imprisonment, yet that he would consider that he neither cõmaunded it, nor was priuie thereunto. Likewise he besought him to consider, that now he was very old, and although at that instant he would remit his death: his age and time according to the course of Nature, would shortly make an ende of his daies.

Unto whom *Hernando Pisarro* made answer, saiyng: that his wordes did not become a personage of so great a minde and courage as he was of to speake: nor yet in suche a case to shewe him self so fraile and fearfull of death, and sith his Judgemente could not be reuoked: he ought to cõfirme him self with the will of God, like a Christian and a gentleman. Unto whiche words *Don Diego* made answer, saiyng: sir, maruell you not that I as a fraile man and a sinner dooe feare death, for the humanitie of Christ did feele the same feare. But in conclusion *Hernando Pisarro* in executiõ of his sentence, caused his throte to be cut: and when he had so doen, he went to the Collao against the cõpanie of captain *Candia*, where he commaunded *Mesa*, who was the author of the Mutinie to be executed, & the same 300 men that *Cãdia* had, he deliuered to *Pedro Ansuerez*, whom he had sent unto a new discouerie: where thei thought al to haue perished wt hũger, through the great marishes & euil waie that thei passed, and in the meane while he abode conquering the coũtrie of Collao, whiche is a plaine Countrey, and hath many golde Mines, and by reason of the cold, the Graine Maiz groweth not there.

The Indians of this Prouince eateth certaine Rootes called Papas, whiche are verie like bothe in makyng and taste to Turnepes: There are greate store of cattaile, and cheefly the shepe which haue been spoken of. And when *Hernando Pisarro* had understanding how the Marques his brother was come to Cusco, he left all his businesse and came to visite him, leauing in his place to go forward with the Conquest, his brother *Gonsalo Pisarro*, who proceeded in that discouerie untill the Prouince of Charcas, where he was enuironed with many Indiã warriers which bent their force upon him, & draue him to suche extremitie: that his brother *Hernãdo Pisarro*, hearyng of suche danger that he was in, was forced to goe from Cusco with many horsmen to succour hym.

And

And becauſe the aide ſhould come vnto him the ſoner, the Marques cauſed to be blowen abrode, that he in perſon would follow with al his power: & to giue the better countenance to the matter, hee went two or three dayes iorney out of the citie. When *Hernando Piſarro* was come where his brother *Gonſalo* was, he found that the Indiãs were put to flight, ſo that certaine dayes they kept both company together, in that conqueſt, where they had many incounters with thoſe Indians, vntil they had taken *Tiſo* their Captaine, priſoner, and then with victory they returned to Cuſco, where the Marques receaued them with great honor, and gaue lyuinges in that countrey, to as many as he (poſſible) might, & the reſidew he ſent to other Conqueſts, with the other Captaines, *Vergara*, and *Porcell*, & by another way he ſent Captaine *Alonſo Marcadillio*, and Captaine *Iuan Perez de Gueuara*, and the Campe Maiſter, *Pedro de Valdiuia*, hee ſent to Chili, from whence Don *Diego de Almagro* came, when he returned to Cuſco.

All thoſe things being done, *Hernando Piſarro* toke his way toward Spayne, to make relation to the Emperor, of the proceedings in Peru, although many of his frends perſwaded him rather to abide, for (quoth they) it is doubtful how his Maieſtie wil take ỹ death of Don *Diego de Almagro*. The Marques alſo counſailed him to beware, & not to truſt any of the frends of Don *Diego*, which commonly were called the men of Chili, & not to permit them to councell, & gather together yea, and if at any time he ſhould ſee aboue fiue of thẽ together, that then he might be aſſured that ſome conſpiracy was in hand.

VVhat happened to captayne *Valdiuia*, in his voyage, to the Prouince of *Chili*. Chap. 13.

PEdro de *Valdiuia*, with his company, came to the Prouince of Chili, where the Indians receiued him with fained peace and frendſhip, becauſe their harueſt was at hand, and not as yet fully

rype: but after their corne was had into their Garnets, they made a generall insurrection, and sodainly came vpon the Spanyards, who went wandring carelesse abroad in the Feeldes, and slue fourteene of them.

Valdiuia hearing of the daunger which his men were in, he made all haste possible, to succour them: and beeinge occupied in the ayde of his company, there were certaine Spanyardes that had conspired against him: but when the parties were knowen, and the case euidently to bee approued, hee forthwith commaunded the conspirators to be hanged, among whom was Captaine *Pedro Sancho de Hoz*, who hee esteemed as his companion, on that Iorney.

Whilest he was executing of Iustice in the Feeld, there came aboue 7000. Indians vpon the cittie, who put the few Spanyards, which had the gard of the cittie in great extremitie, amonge whom were Captaines, *Francisco de Villagran*, and *Alonso de Monroy*, with onely thirtie horsemen, who came out of the Cittie into the Feelde, where they fought like valyaunt men of Warr, with the Indian Archers, from the morninge, till the night compelled them to rest: of which skirmish, they were al both wounded and wearied: The Indians also were as glad of the retire, through the slaughter and damage which that day they had receaued. So that from that day forwarde, all the countrey was on an vproare, and prepared for the Warres, and so continued for the space of eyght yeares, all the which time, *Valdiuia* and his men resisted their fury, and neuer left the countrey, but rather caused his souldiers to plough and sowe the ground, and gather the corne to maintayne them, without any ayde of the Indian helpe, and so continued vntill hee returned to Peru, which was at ỹ time when the Lyceniat *De la Gasca* was preparinge an Armye against *Gonsalo Pisarro*, in all the which warres hee serued, as hereafter shalbe declared.

The.

treateth of the voyage and discouerye made by Gonsalo Pisarro, of the Prouince of Zinamon, *and of the death of the Lord Marques Pisarro.*

How *Gonsalo Pisarro* prepared him selfe for the Iorney of *Zinamon.* chap. 1.

AFter that knowledge was had in Peru, how within the precincte of the dominion of Quito Eastward, was discouered a ritch countrey, where aboundance of Zinamon did grow: By reason wherof vulgarly that Countrey or Prouince was called the land of Zinamon. Whereupon the Marques determined, and also tooke in hand to conquere and inhabite that Countrey: so that for the same purpose he chose his brother *Gonsalo Pisarro*, with intent that allwayes from Quito that byage should be furnished with all necessaries. And in accomplishment of his pretended purpose, he made assignation of the gouernment of Quito to his sayd brother *Gonsalo*, in hope that the Emperour his Maiestie would confirme the same. This don, *Gonsalo Pisarro* tooke his way toward this discouery, with a reasonable number of men.

In the way as he went, he was forced often times to fight with the Indians of the Prouince of Guanuco, who draue him to such extremitie, that he was compelled to write to the Marques for succoure, who sent vnto him *Francisco de Chaues*, and after al those broyles were past, he came to Quito.

In this meane while, the Marques sente *Gomes de Alarado*, to conquere and inhabite the Prouince of Guanuco, because he was informed how certaine Caseikes had conspired, and with a great number of Indians were

gone to the siege of the citie of Trugillio, who also slew as many Spanyards as they met withall: Robbing & spoyling likewise the poore Indians which were Comarcās to the citie, and all the spoyle & carkases of the dead, they offered to an idole which they carryed with them, called Caraquilla: And in this order proceeded on their iorney, vntil *Michel de Lacerna* issued out of the Citie with as many Citizens as he could gather together: Who ioyning with *Francisco de Caues*, fought with the enemie, and obtayned victorie.

How *Gonsalo Pisarro* departed from Quito, and came to the Countrey of *Zinamon*, & what hapned to him on his way. Chap. 2.

GOnsalo Pisarro hauing prepared all necessaries for his determined vyage, hee departed from Quito, hauing in his company 200 Spaniards well trimmed in all poynts, of the which number was one hundred horsemen, and aboue 4000. Indian frends, with 3000. sheepe and hogs. After he was passed a towne called Inga, he came into the countrey of the people called Quixos, which is the farthest Countrey that Inga Guaynacaua conquered toward the North, where as those Indians made a countenance of warre. But in one night they vanished all away, so that one of them could not be taken.

An Earth quake.

After a while that hee had abode with his Armie in the townes and dwellinges of those Indians, refreshing thē selues, there happened a maruailous great Earthquake, with rayne and tempest of Lightning and Thunder, and the ground oppened in many places, and swallowed vp more then 500. houses: yea, a riuer which was not farre from them, did so much increase, that it was not possible for them to passe ouer to seeke victuals: by mean whereof, they were driuen to great penury and hunger.

After

After he departed from theſe Indian dwellings, they came to a row of high hilles, which of force they ſhould paſſe: The extreme colde on the top of thoſe hilles was exceeding great, in ſuch ſort that many of their Indian frendes were there frozen to death: and becauſe that wil derneſſe of mountaines was without any ſuccour of victuals, they were compelled to proceede forward, till they came to a Prouince called Sumaco, which ſtandeth at the foote of a high Volcan, and finding there ſufficient prouiſion of victuals, the army abode there whileſt *Gonſalo Piſarro*, with ſome of thoſe countreymen, entred againe into the mountaines, to ſeeke a conuenyent way for his army to paſſe, and finding none, he came to a towne called Coca, and from thence he ſent for his company which abode at Sumaco, and for the ſpace of two moneths that he abode there, it neuer ceaſed rayning neither day nor night, yea in all that ſpace, there was not ſo much drye wether that they might drie the wet clothes which they ware on their backes. So that in this Prouince of Sumaco, and 50. leagues in circuite, groweth the Zinamon wherof they had notice, which are great treſ with leues like vnto Bay treſ, and the fruite of theſe treſ is like vnto cluſters of ſmall fruite which groweth round like an egge, and although the fruit, leues, barke, and rootes of thoſe treſ haue the ſauour, odor, and ſubſtance of Zinamon, yet the moſt profite is, where the fruit groweth, like vnto a great acorne, and although in all this countrey are many of theſe wilde treſ, which fructifie and growe without any labor of mans hand. Volcan. zinamon.

The Indians haue of the ſame kinde many treſ in their tillage ground, which they trimme and keepe with labor and payne, and thoſe trees produce finer Zinamon a great deale, which they eſteeme in much, becauſe they barter with it in other Coznarcan Prouinces, for victualles, cloth, and all other neceſſaries which are needefull for their ſuſtenaunce.

Of the countrey and Townes, that *Gonsalo Pisarro* passed, vntil hee came to a Land where hee built a Vergantine. Chap. 3.

WHilest *Gonsalo Pisarro* abode in Sumaco, the greatest number of his men ỳ were whole, and sound of body, wente before to discouer the way, according as the Indians gaue the instructions, yea, and oftentimes they ledde them out of the way, euen as the inhabitants of Sumaco had doone, onely for to expell them out of their countrey, and their deceite was, they taught them a way sayinge: follow ye this pathe, which will bring you to a countrey, ful of townes and villages, replenished with aboũdance of victuals: but this aduice was found to be false, for they found the same countrey, which they so highly commended, to be barren, vnhabited, and absolutely without any succour, vntill they came to the villages of Coca, which standeth neare vnto a great riuer, where *Gonsalo Pisarro* had bẽn, before his comming to Sumaco, and there rested for the space of fiue wækes, abiding the comminge of his cõpanion: the Lorde of that place submitted him selfe to his frændship: from thence they trauailed all togeather along ỳ riuer side, downward, vntil they found a narrow gloze, where they made a Bridge to passe ouer, although the water was of 200. fadom dæpe, & had a mighty great fall downewarde, which fall made a marualous strange noyse, which sounded & was heard more thẽ fiue leagues from the place: certaine daies iorney from this passage, they found that the riuer ran circuite, so ỳ they came to a narrow place ỳ was litle more then 20. fote brode, where also was another like fall, & eth side garnished with hard Rocke, so that for the space of 50. leagues, they found no conuenient passage, but at this place were a number of Indians, attended their cõming to resist them. But yet the Hargabuliers made the passage cleare, & forced the Indians to giue place: in the meane while they made a bridge of timber, and passed ouer all the army in safetie.

In

In this forme, they iorneyed through a great wilderneſs of Mountaine, vntil they came to ỹ countrey called Guema, which was somewhat plaine, but replenished with many bogs & brookes: in which place they were driuen to great extremity of victuals, and through want, were forced to liue with siluester fruits, vntil they came to another cõtrey, where they found some succor of food, & the soyle indifferently inhabited: these people were cloathed in garments made of cotten wool, but in al the other cõtreyes which they had trauailed, ỹ people wẽt naked, which was either through ỹ great heat which they haue cõtinually, or els through pouerty, as they haue not wherwith to buy apparrel: they also vsed the forepart of their priuy members, to be tied with a string of cotten wool betwixt their legs, & made fast at their girdling: & the wemẽ had certain rags, to couer their secrets, but no other kinde of clothing.

In this place *Gonsalo Piſarro* commaunded a certayne vessel, called a Vergantine to be made, for to carry their fardage, & other necessaries downe the riuer, & likewise their sicke men, and also for his owne persõ, because that in some places the countrey was so full of bogs, that they could not iorney. The buildinge of this Vergantine was very troublesome, for they were forced to make a Forge for their Iron worke, in the which they also profited with the horseshooes of the dead horses, for want of other iron: they made also coles to serue the turne. In these workes *Gonsalo Piſarro* permitted none of his cõpany to bee vnoccupied, from the eldest to the yongest, & he himselfe ỹ first at al assaults, aswel with the axe as with the hammer: in stæd of pitch, they vsed the gum which distilled from certaine træs, & in steed of Aucom, they toke old Mantels of the Indians, & some of the Spanyards shirts which were rottẽ through the great wet which they had passed, so that euery one was contributar with such things as he might spare: In this order the vessell was finished and launched into the riuer, & al their fardage laden, they made also certain Canoas, to go in cõpany with the Vergantine.

The building of a Vergantine.

A shifte.

How

How *Francisco de Alerano*, fled with the Vergantine, and into what misery they were driuen by want thereof. Chap. 4.

WHen *Gonsalo Pisarro* had finished the Vergantine, he thought that all his trouble was at an end, and with this new vessel to discouer all ẏ land, whereupon he continued his iorney, & all the force of his armie trauayled by land through ẏ bogs: keeping along the ryuer side, in which way they passed through many deserts of mountaines, and Cane fieldes, making their way by force of hand with their swordes, hatchets, and axes, and when they might not pas on the one side of the Riuer, the Vergantine caryed them ouer to the other side, so that alwayes at night the Landmen, and watermen lodged together.

When *Gonsalo Pisarro* considered how they had trauailed aboue 200. leagues downe along the riuer, & found no prouision of victual, but only siluester fruites, & some rootes, he commaunded one of his Captaines called *Francisco de Orellana* ẏ with 50. men he should goe before to discouer the Riuer, and to seeke victuals, with commission that if he should happen to finde any, that then he should therewith loade the Vergantine, leauinge the fardage which was aboorde at the meeting of two great Riuers, of which he had vnderstandinge to bee of 80. leagues distant, & also that he should leaue two Canoas at certaine Riuers which crossed ouer, to the intent that with them he might passe his men ouer. When *Orellana* had taken his leaue, he departed, shortly after found the currant of such force, that in short time hee came to the meetinge of the two great Riuers, without finding any kinde of sustenance: and also considering what way he had made in three daies, he found that in a whole yere if was not possible to returne that way agayne, by reason of the vehemency of the great currant, wherupon he determined to

proceede,

proceed downe ẏ riuer, euen whither fortune should lead him, although he iudged it a thing more cõuenient to abide there, yet notwithstanding, he proceeded on, and toke likewise the Canoas wᵗ him, although some of his company required him to abide their generals order & cõming, especially Father *Gaspar de Carauajall*, who was their preacher, & because he insisted more then the residue, the captaine vsed him very vncurteously, as wel in word as deede, and with wil or nil, he proceeded on his enterprise, making some entries into ẏ land, where he fought with such Indians as would haue resisted him: & many times they came to encounter with him in the Riuer with their Canoas, with whom they could not fight at will, because the Vergantine was so full of men, that one disturbed another.

In a certaine countrey where he found place conuenient, he abode and built another Vergantine: For the Indians of this soile came and submitted thẽselues vnto him, and also prouided him both of victuals and al other things necessary: in another prouince forward, he fought with ẏ Indians & obtained victory against them, of whõ he had intelligence, that certaine iorneys from thence, within ẏ mayne, was a countrey in ẏ which dwelt none but women, who were valiant, and defended themselues against their Comarcans. With this aduertisement he proceeded on his way, without finding in all his iorney, either gold or plate, and ceased not till he came out into the Northern sea, being 325. leagues distant from the Iland of cubagua: This Riuer is called Maranion, because the Captaine which discouered this nauigation, was called *Maranion*. The beginning or headspring of this Riuer, commeth from Peru, out of the side of ẏ mountaines of Quito. It runneth by direct course (accounting by the rule of altitude of the sun) 700. Leagues, and with the crookednes and compasse which the same Riuer maketh in many places from his origen, vntill it commeth into the mayne Sea, containeth 1800. leagues, and the mouth

Another Vergantine.

Note.

Maranion.

of the same riuer is fiftéene leagues brode, and further inward it wareth three, yea and fowre leagues broder.

When *Orellana* was commen out of the Riuer of Maranion, he toke his way toward Castile, where he enformed his Maiestie of his discouerie, and also how he had finished the same at his owne cost and charge. And more ouer in his said discouerie, was a countrey exceedinge ritche, in the which liued none but Wemen: which coũtrey cõmonly was called the conquest of the Amazones: Beseeching his maiestie to graunt vnto him the gouarnment & discouery of ẏ said countrey: the which his request accordingly was graunted vnto him. Wherupon he gathered together the number of fiue hundred men, among whiche were many Gentlemen, and men of greate credit, with whom hee tooke shippynge in Saincte Lucar de Barrameda, and after he was commen to the Altitude of the Canaria Ilandes, the winde was contrarie for his Nauigation: and also driuen to want of victuales, wherupon the Fleete was seperated, one shippe cleane without sight of the other, and he himself died on the way, in suche sorte, that his companie were scattered amonge the Ilandes.

Of all the whiche his proceedynges, *Gonsalo Pisarro* made great complaynt, principally for so trecherous a parte, as was to leaue him in suche necessitie and want of victuall, and likewise, without any succour or helpe to passe his armie ouer the Riuers: And also, because hee had deceaued him of a great summe of Golde, Plate, and Emraldes, which was aboorde of his Uergantine, with the whiche he had sufficient to finish bothe shippyng, and all other furniture, necessarie for the discouerie, whiche the Emperour had graunted vnto him, through his deceitfull practise.

How

How *Gonſalo Piſarro* returned to *Quito*, and of the great paines and miſeries, which he paſſed in the returne. Chapter. 5.

When *Gonſalo Piſarro* was come to the place, where he commanded *Orellana* to leaue the Canoas for his commynge, for to paſſe certaine Riuers: By meane whereof he was driuen to greate extremitie: and forced to make Raffes, and Canoas for that purpoſe. And when he was come to the mæting of the two Riuers, where he appoynted *Orellana* to attende his commyng, and finding him not: yet there he had vnderſtandyng of a Spaniard which *Orellana* had left on ſhore behinde him, becauſe he ſtood againſt his pretended voyage: and *Orellana* alſo intending to take this new diſcouery in hand in his owne name, & not as Liuetenant to *Gonſalo Piſarro*, wherupon he deſiſted frō thaucthorie receiued of *Piſarro*, & compelled his company to elect him for their captain & general.

Now *Gonſalo Piſarro*, beyng left ſuccourleſſe & voyde of help for his Nauigation, & the only way to prouide ſuſtenance for his armie, yet he found ſomwhat amonge the Indians for barter of ſmall bels & glaſſes: notwithſtandyng his græfe and heauineſſe was not ſmall, wherupon he determined to returne backe agayne to Quito, from whence he had trauailed more then. 400 leagues of moſt euill way, among Mountaynes, and country vnhabited: the which when he had diſcouered, hee wondered at his owne trauayles, which he had paſſed, & eſcaped the cruel death of hunger in ỹ wildernes of Mountaynes, wher 40 of his mē ended their daies, without any hope of ſuccour but euen as they ared for meate, lening to træs, they fel downe dead with very hunger. But now cōmitting himſelf to God hæ returned by another way, leauing ỹ way ỹ he came, which was not only troubleſome to paſſe, but alſo voyde of al kinde of ſuſtenance, & ſo at al aduentures

sought another way, which was as euill & rather worse then the way which they had comen, in the which they great hunger had much to do to sustaine life, although they killed their horses which were left, and greyhounds, with other sort of dogs to eate: the extremitie of hunger was such, that a cat or a hen, was worth fiftie poyzes, which is starling neare twenty pound, & one of those poysoned foules called Alcatrax, was worth ten poyzes.

In this manner, *Gonsalo Pisarro* continued on his way, toward Quito, where as longe before hee gaue aduice of his returne: wherupon the Cittizens of Quito prouided great aboundance of hogs, & sheepe, & came out of the citie to mæte him on his way: they caryed also with thē some horses & apparrel, for *Gonsalo Pisarro*, and his Captaines, the which succor came vnto him, being 50. leagues from Quito, who cōming vnto him with such prouisiō, God he knoweth, how ioyfully it was accepted, but chiefely the victuals: *Gonsalo Pisarro* & his company, were almost naked, for longe sithence with the great waters of rayne, & otherwise, their clothes were rottē from their bodies, so that now, each of them had but only two small Deare skins, which couered their fore parts, and also their hinder partes: some had lefte olde rotten breeches, & shooes made of raw deare skins: their swords wanted scabards and were spoyled with rust, they came all on foote, their armes and legs, were scratched with shrubs and briers, their iestures seemed like vnto dead men, so that scarcely their frends & olde acquaintance knew them: In which painefull Journey, in more then 200. leagues, they could finde no salte, which they found to bee a great want vnto them. But when they were come into the countrey of Quito, and had receaued that frendly succour, they fel on their knees, and kissed the ground, yeldinge vnto God most humble and harty thankes, who had deliuered them from so many perrils and daungers.

Their exceeding hunger was so great, that they began

to

to feede like raueninge woolfes, ſo that it was thought conuenient for their health, to take their meat, with moderate diet, vntil by litle and litle, their ſtomackes were comforted, and ſtrengthned for digeſture.

When *Gonſalo Piſarro* ſaw that the horſes and apparell which was brought, would but only furniſh him and his Captaines, neither hee nor they would not take any parte thereof, nor yet chaunge their olde ragges, which they had on their backes, to obſerue the rule of equitie, like good ſouldiers: ſo that in this forme and attire, hee with his company, entred into the citie of Quito, in a morninge, and wente directly to the Temple, to render vnto God moſt humble laude and praiſe, who of his infinite goodnes had deliuered them out of ſo manye perrils and daungers: and after their prayſes giuen, eache one attired him ſelfe according to his poſſiblitie. A noble minde.

This countrey where the Zinamon groweth, ſtandeth vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne, euen as the Ilandes of Maluco doth, which alſo bringeth forth Zinamon, which ordinarily is ſpente in Spayne, and in other orientall partes.

How the inhabitantes of *Chili*, began to conſpire the Marques death. Chap. 6.

When *Hernando Piſarro* executed *Don Diego de Almagro* in the citie of Cuſco, hee ſente a Sonne of his, which he had begotte of an Indian Woman, to the citie of ỹ Kings, whoſe name was alſo *Don Diego de Almagro*, who was a vertuous younge man of great courage, and well brought vp: his cheefe exercise was to ride a horſe well, both after the Genet vſe, and warlike order, in the which facultie hee prooued a gallaunt Horſman: hee could alſo write and reade exceedinge well: his Schoolemaiſter and Tutor, was a Gentleman called *Iuan de Herrada*, who had likewiſe the

gouernment of his person. The Father of this young man commended his Sonne vnto this man: Now whan he was in the citie of the Kinges, with his Pupill, hee vsed greate conuersacion with such as he thought meete to bee of his partialitie, who were such as went wãdring vp and downe in the Countrey, without a guide, as men lefte succourlesse, and ouercome, and none would entertaine them because they were with *Don Diego de Almagro*, at the time of his ouerthrow.

Now *Iuan de Herrada*, callinge to remembrance, how *Hernando Pisarro* was gone into Spayne, and his brother *Gonsalo*, likewise gone into the countrey of Zinamon, in discouery, and hee also beinge set at libertie by the Marques, for vntill this time, hee was as a Prisoner. So that now the younge man and his Tutor, began to prepare armour and other furniture of War, in a readines, meaning to reuenge his Fathers death, & the destruction which was made in his Fathers armie: the remembrance wherof, was as yet very fresh in minde, although the Marques often times procured to haue them for his faithfull frends: but yet he could neuer bring his desire to effect: wherupon hee tooke occasion to take from them certain Indians of seruice, thinking by that meane they should not haue wherwithall to maintaine such as daily came vnto them: but his pretence auayled not, for they were so knitte togeather in league of freendship, that all which they possessed, was a thing common among them, & that which was gotten by play, or stealth, they brought to *Iuan de Herrada*, his House, as a common stocke to maintayne him withall: so that dailye they multiplyed, and furnished them selues with Armour: yet not withstandinge, there were many of the Marques freendes, that gaue him warninge of their dooinge.

But hee not regarding their counsayle, beeing a man of a gentle nature and condicion, answered them, saying: that they should not encrease the sorrowe of the ouer-

throwen

throwen men. Alas (quoth hee) their greefe is great ynough, to ſee themſelues poore, ouercomen, and almoſt of all men abhorred.

Don Diego de Almagro, and his companye, beeinge aſſured of the playne meaninge of the Marques, they became euery daye more ſhameleſſe then other: yea, they letted not the cheefeſt of them, to paſſe by the Marques in the ſtreate, without any ſubmiſſion or reuerence dooinge vnto him: and alſo on a night they had tyed three Halters on the Picot, which is a Piller, wheron they vſe to doo execution of hanginge, in the Market place of euery cittie.

The one of thoſe Halters was ſet towarde the Marques houſe, and another towarde the houſe of his Liuetenant, and the thirde toward the houſe of his Secretary.

Yet the Marques diſſimuled all theſe dooinges, excuſinge them as men ouercome, and without ſhame, and therfore they vſed ſuch practiſes.

But theſe longe ſufferings, made them a great deale the bolder: ſo that from two hundred leagues diſtante, came diuerſe of the parcialitie which were tofore baniſhed, amonge whom they abſolntely conſpired the Marques death, and to bee Lorde of the Lande. as afterward followed. Yet they ſtayed ſomewhat ỹ longer in the execution of their determination, onely to heare ſome newes, becauſe they had vnderſtanding that Captaine *Diego de Aluarado*, was gone into Spayne, to accuſe *Hernando Piſarro*, of his former procœdinges, and how *Hernando* was for his offence apprehended, and the cauſe earneſtly followed: they had alſo intelligence, how his Maieſtie had prouided the Lycenciat *Vaca de Caſtro*, to come into Peru, to make informacion of all the former ſucceſſe, but not to puniſhe the offences with ſuch rygor as they expected.

Wher-

Whereupon leauing all delaies aside, they forthwith determined to execute their intended purpose, although they had a great desire to se what *Vaca de Castro*, would do, saying: that if this new Iudge do not as soone as hee commeth, apprehend and put to death the Marquez, that then they would murther them both together: and for to haue more assured aduertisement, they sent *Don Alonso de Monte Mayor* towarde Tumbez, fothers in his companie. Because there were certayn shippes arriued, which came from Panama, who brought newes, how *Vaca de Castro* was preparyng his viage into Peru. Afterwarde it happened, that when *Vaca de Castro* had imbarked him selfe in Panama: the currant of the Sea being contrary, draue him in such sorte to Leeward, that he was forced to come on lande at the Iland of Gorgona, and to passe vp the Riuer of Sainct Iohn, and by good happe came into the gouernacion of *Benalcasar*, and from thence passed by lande into Peru, as hereafter more particuler shalbe declared.

The men of Chili seeyng the delay in the comyng of *Vaca de Castro*, they suspected that by their owne delay of their pretence, intelligence might be geuen to him of their doynge, and thereby bee an occasion of the losinge of all their liues. So that they now were agréd to execute theyr intente, as in this chapter folowinge shalbe declared.

How the Marquez his friendes gaue him a speciall warnyng of the order of the conspiracie of his death. Chap. 7.

IT was openly knowen in the Cittie of the Kinges, how the men of Chili had conspyred the Marques his death, & many of his frends gaue

giuing him warning thereof: vnto whome he made aunswer, saying, that their heads should kéepe his: so ỳ in fine, he was careleſſe of his enimies, in such wise that oftentymes he would goe out of the Cittie, to certayne Villes that he had a making, with only his Lacky attend vpõ him. And to such as demaunded of him, why he had not a Garde to wayte vpon him: he would say, that he would not that men should thinke, that he stode in feare of the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, who was comming for to be Judge against him.

Wherupon the men of Chili, blewe abroade that *Vaca de Castro* was dead, séeing that the Marqueſſe stod in such securitie of him selfe. So that on a daye *Iuan de Herrada* went to visite him at his house, with certayne of his parcialitie, and founde him in his Garden: where after certayne wordes, he demaunded why his Lordshippe would consent to kyll him and his fellowes?

The Marqueſſe aunswered with a great oathe, that he neuer had any such intencion. But rather (quoth he) it is tolde mée, that you and your frends goe about to morder mée, and for that purpoſe ye prouide dayly Armour and Municion. Vnto whome *Iuan de Herrada* made aunswer, saying: Syr sith your Honour doth prouide Launces, it is no meruayle though we buie Corſelettes to defende vs: he was so bolde to speake so presumptuously, because he had néere at hande in Ambushe, aboue fortie armed men. Furthermore he sayde, that because his Honour should put away his suspicion, that it might pleaſe him to graunt lycence to him, and *Don Diego de Almagro* and his men, to depart out of the Countrey.

The Lorde Marqueſſe hauing conceyued no suspicion by his wordes, dyd rather pittie them, and assured them with amorous wordes, saying: that he had not bought Launces to contend with them.

He had no soner spoken these wordes, when he went to an Orenge tree, and gathered certaine Orenges, which there were highly estæmed, because they were the first that grewe in that Countrey, and gaue them to *Iuan de Herrada*, saying in his eare, that if he stode in néede of any thing, that he should tell him, and he would prouide him according to his desire: for the which his gentle offer, *Iuan de Herrada* kyssed his honours handes.

And leauing the Marquesse with this securitie, he toke his leaue, and went home to his house: where he with the principallest of his parciallitie agréed, that the nert Sunday following they should make an ende of the Marquesse dayes, sithens they had letten the matter slippe, which should haue bene done on Saint *Iohn* Baptist day, past.

It happened that on the Saturday, one of the conspirators, opened the matter in confession to the Curate of the Church, who the same night aduised *Antonio Picado*, Secretarie to the Marquesse, beséeching him to bring him to his Lordes presence: Whereuppon the Secretarie went with him to the house of *Francisco Martin*, brother to the Marquesse, where he was at supper with his Children, and incontinent arose from the Table, and came to the Curate, who enformed him of the trueth of the conspiracie, at whose wordes the Marquesse was not a lyttle amased: and within a lyttle whyle, he sayde to his Secretarie, that he beléeued not the Curates aduise, because (sayde he) it is not long agone, sith *Iuan de Herrada*, came vnto me with great humilitie, and that the partie which had opened his minde to the Curate in confession, should séeme by that practise to craue somewhat of him, and to haue him more bound to gratifie him, he had deuised that pollicie. But notwithstanding, he sent for Doctor *Iuan Velasques*, his Lieutenaunt, who being euyll at ease could not come. So that the Marquesse went vnto him the same night home to his house, hauing in his company onely his Secretarie, with other two or thrée personnes,

and

and a Lynck caried before him, & finding his Lieutenant in his bed: he tolde him the cauſe of his comming. Who hauing heard all the matter, made lyght of it, wylling his Lordſhippe not to feare: for as long (quoth he) as I haue this white wande of Juſtice in my hande: there is none in all this Lande that dareth to ſtyrre or make an vprore. In which his ſaying it fell ſo out, that he kept promiſe, for afterwarde as he was running away, as hereafter ſhall be declared, at the tyme when they were kylling the Marqueſſe: he fled out at a windowe, and deſcending downe the ſide of a wall, he caried the rod of Juſtice in his mouth.

Of the death of the Lorde Marqueſſe, *Don Franciſco Piſarro*. Chap. 8.

With all thoſe fayre wordes and aſſurances, the Marqueſſe was ſo troubled in minde, that the next day being Sũday, he would not goe to the Cathedrall Church, as he was accuſtomed: but rather had diuine ſeruice ſayd in his houſe, and meant not to goe abroade till he had prouided for his ſecurity. When ſeruice was ended in the Parriſhe Church: the Doctor *Iuan Velaſques*, and Captaine *Franciſco de Chaues*, who at that inſtaunt was the chiefeſt perſon in the Lande, next vnto the Marqueſſe, came together accõpanied with many others, to the Lord Marqueſſe his houſe, & after their viſitation was made, the moſt of the Cittizens returned home to their houſes. And the Doctor, and *Franciſco de Chaues*, abode dinner with the Marqueſſe: And after they had dyned, which might be betweẽ the howres of twelue and one of the day, thinking that all the people of the Cittie were, according to the cuſtome of the Coũtrey, taking their reſt, and the Marqueſſe ſeruaunts alſo at dinner.

Iuan de Herrada, with other twelue companions, came from his houſe which ſtandeth three hundreth paces diſtãt from the Marqueſſe houſe, through the open ſtreetes, with

theyr swords ready drawne in theyr hands, crying with a loude voice, saying: Let the Tyrant traytor die, who hath commaunded the Iudge to be slaine, which the King our Maister sent into this land. The cause which they helde, not to goe in secrete wise, but rather with all the noyse possible, that the Cittizens should imagine theyr nũber to be great, considering ẏ they durst attempt such a waighty matter so publiquely, and also at such an howre, that although they should come with all spæde to the sacker, yet they should come too late, or else them selues to be slaine.

In this forme they came to the Marquesse house, leauing one at his gate, with a drawne sworde in his hande, which was blodied with the blod of a Ram: who cryed with a loude voice, dead is the Tyrant, dead is ẏ Tyrant. The which his proclamation, was the cause that many of the Cittizens which were cõming to the rescue, returned home to theyr houses againe, beleeuing that ẏ thing was true, which that one man had spoken. Wherupon *Iuan de Herrada* procéeded vp a payre of stayres with his men, in the meane whyle, the Marquesse was aduised by certaine Indians which stood at his chãber dore, & there vpon he cõmaũded *Francisco de Chaues*, that whilst he wẽt in, to arme him selfe, to kéep the Hall dore: who was so sore troubled in minde, ẏ he forgot the shutting of dores, & went down the stayres, to know what ẏ matter was, & suddenly one of the conspirators thrust him through w̃ his sword: who séeing him self mortally woũded, drew his sword, saying, what haue ye no regard to your frændes. But the stripes came so thick vpõ him, ẏ he was sone dispatched, and leauing him there dead, they ran like desperate men into the Marquesse Hall, where were in nũber xij. Spaniards of the Marquesse frænds, who fled, leaping out at ẏ windowes, amõg whom was doctor *Velasques* his Lieutenãt, with his white rod of Iustice in his mouth, according to his promise, for because both his hands were néedful to help him down the wall. The Lord Marquesse being in his bed Chãber, &

his

his brother *Franciſco Martin*, helping to arme him, with two Gentlemen and two Pages, the one was called *Iuan de Vargas*, who was ſonne to *Gomes de Tardoya*, and the other was named *Eſcandon*, who ſéeing the enemie ſo nigh, that they had not tyme to arme they: Maiſter: the Marqueſſe toke his ſworde and Target (which is a ſhéelde of leather) in hande, and came to his Chamber dore: where he and his folke valiauntly defended them ſelues a good ſpace, and fought ſo manfully, that the enimies coulde not enter, ſaying with a lowde voice, Oh brother, vpon them, vpon them, let them dye like Traytors as they are. But the men of Chili fought ſo long, that they ſlew *Franciſco Martin*, in whoſe place entred one of the Pages: The Chili men ſéeing them defend them ſelues ſo long, & fearing that ſuccour might come, and aſſault them on they: backes: they determyned to put the matter in hazarde, ſo that they toke one of they: owne company, and thruſt him in at the dore with force of hande, being well armed: and whylſt the Marqueſſe was occupied in killing of him, the reſidue had tyme to enter the Chamber dore, and they all with one accord ſtroke at the Marqueſſe, who fought ſo long with them, that with verie wearineſſe, his ſworde fell out of his hands, and then they ſlew him with a pricke of a Rapyer through his throte: and when he was fallen to the ground, and his winde fayling him, he cryed vnto God for mercie, and when he had ſo done, he made a croſſe on the ground and kiſſed it, and then incontinent yéelded vp the Ghoſt: and when he was fully dead, they ſlew alſo his two Pages: And on the Chili ſide were foure ſlaine, and diuers others wounded.

The cruell death of the Marqueſſe.

When this ſorrowfull newes was knowne in the Cittie, there came aboue two hundred men to ayde *Don Deigo de Almagro*, for though they were armed and in a readineſſe, yet they durſt not come abroade, tyll they perfectly knew how the matter would paſſe. But now they ran vp and downe the Cittie, taking the Armor from ſuch as

were comming to succour the Marquesse. When the murderers came out of the Marquesse house, with their bloodye swordes in their handes: they forthwith caused *Don Diego* to mount vpon his Horse, and to passe through the chiefest stretes of the Cittie, saying: that in all Peru, there was no other Gouernour, but onely he, nor yet any King aboue him. And when this was done, he sackt the Marquesse house, and also the houses of his Brother & his Secretarie. And then he compelled the Councell & State of the Cittie to receyue *Don Diego* for their gouernour, vnder ỹ collour of the Capitulation, which was tofore made with his Maiestie, at the beginning of ỹ discouerie, which in effect was. That *Don Diego de Almagro*, should haue the gouernment of newe Toledo, and after his decease, his sonne, or whome he should appoint to enioy the same. When all this dilligence was done, they commaunded to be slaine certayne Vassailes, which were knowne to be seruaunts and frends to the Marquesse.

It was a sorrowfull spectacle to behold and heare, the Wiues of dead men, what dolefull cries they made, yea, & the lamentable words that they spake. The corpes of the Lord Marquesse, certaine Negros drew a long the stretes toward the Church, & none durst burie him, vntyll *Iuan de Barbaran*, Cittizen of Trugillio, who somtyme had been seruaunt to the Marquesse, he and his Wife buried bothe the Marquesse and his Brother, as well as they might, hauing first obteined licence for that fact of *Don Diego*: they made all the haste possible to burie him, and yet they had not leysure to attyre him according to the vsuall ceremony of Knights, of the order of S. *Iames*, because they were aduised how the men of Chili were comming to cutte off the Marquesse head, for to put it on the Picot, which is a Gallowes after their vse. In this forme *Iuan de Barbaran*, buried his Lord and Maister, and after the burial he caused the Funerall pompe to be solemnized, according as he was able, at his owne cost. After all this good wyll and

dilligence

diligence was ſhewed: he went to ſéeke his Chyldren, which went wandring aſtray, to procure theyr ſecuritie.

The Chili men were now Lordes and Rulers in the Cittie. By this ſucceſſe we may learne and ſée the worldly thinges, and the varietie of Fortune, that in ſo ſhort a tyme, a Gentleman who had diſcouered, conquered, and gouerned ſo great Countries, ſo many Kingdomes, ſuch innumerable ſums of Treaſure: who had giuen ſo great rentes and liuings, in reſpect of time, the greateſt Prince in the world had not done the lyke. And now to be ſuddenly ſlaine, by the handes of onely twelue men, at none tyme, being in a Cittie, where all the Cittizens were eyther his ſeruants, Kinſemen, or Soldiours, vnto whome, generally he had giuen ſufficient liuing, and none among them would come to ſuccour him: nay, rather they fled away, euen the Seruaunts of his owne houſe, & his noble corps ſo vily buried. And all the infinite Treaſure which he poſſeſſed, conſumed in a moment, not hauing ſo much left to burie him, according to the degrée and ſtate of his perſon: and all theſe thinges to happen vnto him after he had thereof ſufficient warning by ſundrie men, as héere before hath bene declared. This hath happened the. xxvi. day of Iune. 1541.

Of the cuſtomes and qualities of the Marqueſſe, *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, and the Diſcouerer, *Don Diego de Almagro*. Chap. 9.

SIthens this Hiſtorie and Diſcouery of the Prouince of Peru, hath origen from the two valiant Captaines, of whome hyther vnto we haue ſpoken: Who are ỳ Marqueſſe, *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, and *Don Diego de Almagro*: It is méete and conuenient to write theyr cuſtomes and qualities, comparing them together, as *Plutarchus* doeth, when he writeth of two Captains, which are in any reſpect

respect comparable one to the other: and touching the lynage of these our Captaines, at the beginning of this Historie, is written asmuch as could be knowen. But in the residue they were bothe valiaunt persons of great courrage, they were also great sufferers of paynes & trauails, and verie vertuous, they were frends to do plesure to al men, at theyr owne cost. They were much lyke of inclynation, especially, in the state of lyuing, for neyther of them was married, although the youngest of them bothe at the tyme of theyr death, was aboue three score and fiue yeres of age.

They were bothe enclined to affayres of Warres, although *Don Diego de Almagro*, when occasion of Warres wanted, applied him selfe to thinges of gaynes: they were nere of one age, when they toke the conquest of Peru in hande, in which Discouerie and conquest, they toke the paynes which hath bene declared: although the Marquesse dyd suffer greater trauaile, and passed greater perils then *Don Diego*. For whylst the one was occupied in the greatest part of the Discouerie, the other abode in Panama, prouiding necessaries & Furniture for him, as lykewise hath bene declared. They were bothe noble minded, and alwayes they pretended and conceyued haughty thinges, they were gentle and amyable to theyr Soldiours, they were equall in lyberallitie: although in thewe, *Don Diego* had the aduantage, because he loued that his gift should be published and blowne abroade: vnto which condition the Marquesse was contrarie, for he would not permit that his lyberall giftes should be spoken of: but rather procured to haue them kept in secrete, hauing more respect to prouide for the necessitie of such as wanted, then to obtaine a vaineglorious report.

It once happened that a poore Soldiour, had his chefe ritches in a Horse, which dyed of an vnknown disease, of which mishap the Marquesse hauing vnderstanding, and coming downe into his Tennis Court, thinking to finde

the

the poꝛe ſoldiour there, he bꝛought in his boſome a wedge of Golde, of ten pound weight, to giue vnto him with his owne hands: and not finding him there at that inſtant, he chaunced to make a match at play, & without putting off his coate, he played his match, becauſe he would not that any ſhould ſée the wedge of Gold which was in his boſom. The play cõtinued the ſpace of thꝛée howꝛes, & then came the ſoldioꝛ foꝛ whome the golde was bꝛought, the which he delyuered vnto him ſecretly, ſaying: that he had rather haue giuẽ him thꝛée times as much, thẽ to ſuffer ẏ paines which he had taken in his long tarying: with many other lyke examples, which might at length be ſpoken of.

So that alwayes the Marqueſſe almes and giftes were diſtributed by his owne handes, and with aſmuch ſecreſie as might be, yea, and alwayes pꝛocured the receyuers to kæpe ſilence: And foꝛ this cõſideration, *Don Diego* was helde to be moꝛe liberall, foꝛ although he gaue largely, yet he had a foꝛme how it ſhould ſeem much moꝛe then it was: notwithſtanding, touching this vertue of Magnificence, they may iuſtly be called equall. The Marqueſſe alſo was wont to ſay, that conſidering the company of aduenture and fellowſhip made betwæne them, that neither of them could giue any thing wherein the other had not his part, & therfoꝛe as lyberall was he, which permitted the other to giue: and foꝛ compꝛobation, this ſhall ſerue. That where they were bothe the ritcheſt men, bothe in Rent & Treaſure, and as lyberally might diſpend the ſame, as any Pꝛince in the woꝛld, not hauing a kingly Crowne: yet they came bothe to death with great pouertie: that at this day, there is not any remembꝛaunce of any thing pꝛoper, which was theyꝛs: ſauing, that of all theyꝛ goods & lands, they had not wherewithall to burie them: as the lyke is wꝛitten of *Cato* & *Silla*, and of many other Romane Captaines, which were buried of almes.

Theſe two valiant Captaines, were affectioned to dw foꝛ theyꝛ ſeruaunts and ſouldioꝛs, bothe to enritch them,

and to deliuer them from perils. But the Marquesse did rather in that respect exceed: For once it happened, passing the Riuer called Barranca, that the great Currant caried away one of his Indians of seruice, which by mishap was fallen therein: and when the Marquesse sawe the peryll of his seruaunt, he forthwith stripped him selfe, & leapt into the Riuer, hauing good skill of swimming, and pluckt him out by the haire of his head: putting him selfe in great daunger, through the extreame force of the Currant, in such sort that the valiantest man in all his host, durst not take the lyke enterprise in hande: wherupon some of his Captaines did reprehend his ouer much boldnesse, vnto whome he aunswered, saying: Ye know not what thing it is to loue a seruaunt well.

Although the Marquesse gouerned long time, and more quietly: yet *Don Diego* was more ambicious, and desirous of rule and dignitie. Bothe of them conserued antiquitie, in their ordinarie apparell, euen from their youth vpwardes, especially the Marquesse, who euer vsed to weare ordinarily a Coate of black cloath, with long quarters, and short wasted, his shoes of a white Déere skin, and a white felt Hat, and his Sworde & Dagger of auncient facion. And when through the importunate request of his seruants, vpon any solempne holy day, he happened to weare a Gowne furred with Martins, which the Lord Marquesse Cortez had sent to him from the new Spaine: as soone as he came from Church, he would throwe it frō him, and vsed to haue a towell about his necke. In the tyme of Peace, he vsed much to play at Tennis, or at Bowles, and therefore chéefly he vsed the Towell about his necke, to wype the sweat from his face.

Bothe these Captaynes were most patient in paynes taking, and also in any extremitie of hunger: But perticularly the Marquesse, shewed the same in the exercise of the sayde pastimes, for there were very fewe young men that could endure with him. He was also more enclyned

clyned to any kinde of paſtime, then *Don Diego*, ſo that many tymes he would play at the Bowles, all the whole day, and paſſed not with whome he played, although it were eyther with Marriner or Myller, nor yet would permitte any to take vp his Bowle for him, nor to vſe towarde him any vſuall ceremonies of duety, accuſtomed to his Eſtate and dignitie. It was ſome waighty matter that ſhould cauſe him to leaue from play, eſpecially, when he was a loſer. But if at any he had aduertiſement of rebellion, or inſurrection of Indians: then forthwith his Armor was at hand, and Launce in readineſſe, he vſed in ſuch extremities, to ryde Poſte alone through the Cittie, towarde the place where the alteration was, without tarying for more company.

Theſe Captaynes were ſo ready, and of ſuch haughty courage in the Indian warre, that eyther of them would not let to giue the Encounter, although the enimies were in number. 100000. They were of good vnderſtanding and iudgement in any thing, that was to be prouided for the warres, or for gouernment: eſpecially, being bothe men vnlearned, for they could neyther write, reade, or yet firme, which was a thing of great deffect, in ſuch noble Perſonages, dealing in ſuch waighty affayres. Yet neuertheleſſe, in all other thinges, of vertuous inclynations, they ſhewed them ſelues to be Noble men, onely the former want excepted, wherein the auncient wyſe men, dyd holde ſuch want for an argument of baſeneſſe of lynnage.

The Marqueſſe was a man that had great confidence in his ſeruaunts and frendes: All the diſpatches which he made, aſwell in gouernment, and reprehencion of Indians, he vſed to make two markes, betweene the which, *Antonio Picado*, his Secretary, fyrmed, the name of *Franciſco Piſarro*. But theſe men may excuſe them ſelues, as *Ouidius* excuſed *Romulus*, ſaying: that he was an euyll Aſtronomer, but rather had more knowledge in

Armes then in Letters.

Bothe these Captaynes were so affable and playne, among theyr people, that they vsed oftentimes to goe from house to house in the Cittie, to visite theyr neyghbours alone, & toke such fare as they founde, and were alwayes ready to come to any honest neyghbour, that would invite eyther of them. They were equally abstynent and moderate in theyr feeding, and dyet, as also in refraining of sensuallitie, and especially from abusing of any Spanish Women: for they deemed that they could not deale therein, without prejudice of theyr neighbours, whose Wiues or Daughters, those Women were: they neyther ouermuch enclyned to the Indian Women.

The Marquesse had the company of an Indian Gentlewoman, who was sister to *Atabaliba*, by whome he had a Sonne, named *Don Gonsalo*, who deceassed at fowreténe yeeres of age: and a Daughter named *Donca Franciſca*. By an other Indian Woman of Cusco, he had an other Sonne, called *Don Franciſco*.

Don Diego de Almagro, had that sonne of whome we haue spoken, who slewe the Marquesse, which Sonne he had by an Indian Woman of Panama. They bothe receyued honour at the Emperours hands, for as hath bene declared, to *Don Franciſco Piſarro*, he gaue the tyttle or addition of Marquesse, and made him Gouernour of newe Castile, and also ordayned him Knight of the order of Saint *Iames*.

To *Don Diego de Almagro*, he gaue the gouernment of newe Toledo, and the tytle of chéefe Discouerer. Particularly, the Marquesse was greatly affectioned, and helde in great feare and reuerence the name of his Maiestie: in so much that he abstayned from doing of many thinges that he had power to do, declaring that he would not that his Maiestie should say, how he ascended in the Land: and oftentymes when he was present at the melting of the Syluer and Golde, he would ryse from his Chayre, to take vp the graynes of Syluer and Golde, which fell

from

from the clypping, saying: that with his mouth, when handes sayled, he woulde gather together the kinges porcion.

These two Gentlemen, were equall euen in theyr kindes of death, for the Marquesse brother, put *Don Diego* to death, and *Don Diego* his Sonne, slewe the Marquesse. The Marquesse was desirous to benefit the Countrey, by tyllage and other commodities.

He buylt a fayre house in the Cittie of the kinges: he also buylt for the benefite of the Cittie, two rowes of Mylles, along the Riuer side, in which buylding he occupied him selfe, at all tymes of leysure, giuing his counsell and opinion to the Maister workemen: He toke great paynes in setting forwarde the workes of the Cathedrall Church of the Cittie of the kinges, and other lyke Monumentes.

Howe *Don Diego de Almagro* the younger, ioyned an Armie of men of Warre, and howe he slewe certaine Gentlemen: and howe *Alonso de Alnarado* spread his Ensigne for his Maiestie. Chap. 10.

AFter that *Don Diego* had gotten the Cittie, into his power, and taken the wandes of Iustice from the Officers, and placed other by his owne election: he then apprehended Doctour *Velasques*, Lieutenannt to the Marquesse, and *Antonio Picado*, his Secretarie, and chose for the chefe Captaynes of his warres, *Iuan Tellio*, Cittizen of *Ciuile*, and *Francisco Chaues*, and also *Sotelo*. Whē the noyse was spread abroade, of the election of these new Captaynes: all the Vagabounds, and ydle persons which were in that countrey came to this cittie, pretending lybertie, to robbe, spoyle, and lyue at pleasure.

And to furnishe those Roges with money: he toke the Fiftes appertayning to the King, and also the goodes of such as were deceassed, which was kept in a common Chest, to performe theyr Testamentes and Legacies. But afterwarde, discencion began to growe among themselues, for some of the principall personnes, moued with enuie, were mynded to kyll *Iuan de Herrada*, seeing that although *Don Diego* had the name of gouernour and Captayne generall, yet the sayde *Herrada*, ruled and gouerned all. And the mutiny being knowen, many were executed, especially: *Francisco de Chaues*, and also *Anthonio de Orihuela*, Citizen of Salamanca, was beheaded. Because when he came from Spaine, he sayde, that they were Tyrants.

Afterwarde, *Don Diego* sent his Messengers vnto all the Citties of his gouernment, wylling them to admytte and receyue him for theyr gouernour. And although he was accepted in the most Citties, for the feare onely which they had of him: yet in Chachapoyas, where *Alonso de Aluarado* was Lieutenant, as sone as the Pursuiuantes were come, with the commaundement from *Don Diego*, he commaunded them to be arrested, and also fortified him selfe to withstand him in obedience, and had an especiall confidence in the people of the Countrey, and also in a hundred men of warre, which he had attending on his person. Whereupon he spread his Ensigne on the behalfe of his Maiestie, estæming in nothing the threatninges, bragges, and fayre promises of *Don Diego*, which were written vnto him by his Letters: But rather made a playne aunswer, that in no wyse he would receyue him for Gouernour, vntyll such tyme as his Maiestie should commaund the same by expresse order and Commission. And in the meane whyle, he hoped through the helpe of God, and those Gentlemen which were in his company, to reuenge the death of the Lorde Marquesse, and to punishe theyr disobedience and offences, done against his Maiestie.

Maiestie.

When *Don Diego* vnderstoode the pretence of *Aluarado*: incontinent he dispatched Captayne *Garcia de Aluarado*, with a great company of foote men, and Horse men, commaunding him to encounter, and giue him the Onset with all his industrie and power, and that in the way as he should passe, to enter into the Citie of Saint *Mighell*, and there to take bothe Armor and Horses from the Cittizens, and at his returne to doo the lyke in the Cittie of Trugillio.

In this order *Garcia de Aluarado* toke his iorney by Sea, vntyll he arriued at Puetia Sancta, which standeth fiftæne Leagues distaunt from Trugillio, where he mette Captaine *Alonso Cabrera*, who came flying away with all the people of the Towne of Guanuco, to ioygne with the Cittizens of Trugillio, against *Don Diego*: which cause being perfectly knowen, he toke bothe him and certayne of the chæfest of his company. Who as soone as he was come to the Cittie of Saint *Mighell*, he caused to strike of the heads, bothe of him, and one *Villegas* which came in his company.

Howe the Cittie of *Cusco* arose for his Maiestie, and chose for their Captayne generall, *Pedro Aluares Holgui*, and what followed. Chap. 11.

When the Messengers and Prouisions of *Don Diego*, came to the Cittie of Cusco, where at that tyme, *Diego de Silua*, sonne of *Felisiano de Silua*, borne in the Cittie of Rodrigo, and *Francisco de Carnatall*, Sheriffes of the Cittie. But *Carnatall* was afterwarde Campe maister to *Gonsalo Pisarro*: So that

that the Estate of the Cittie agrēde in Councell, not to allowe, nor yet receyue him: although openly they durst not denie his commaundement, and request, vntyll they might perfectly vnderstande, and know what number of men, & prouision he had in readinesse, to procēde with his enterprise: wherupon they made a brēfe aunswere, saying: that they desyred it might please *Don Diego*, to send a more ample authoritie and power, touching the premisses, then as yet he had done, & then in continent they would allowe the same. After that the Messengers were dispatched backe againe with this aunswere: the Estate of the Cittie, calling to remembraunce howe *Gomer de Tordoya*, who was one of the chēefest of Councell of the Cittie, was at that instaunt recreating him selfe abroade in the Countrey. They agrēde to send aduertisement vnto him, of all the procēdinges of *Don Diego*: but it so happened, that they^r Messenger mette him comming towarde the Cittie, and when they had enfourmed him of they^r Message, he hauing a Merlin Hawke vpon his fyst, wrested the head from the body, saying: from hencefoorwarde, it is more conuenient to exercise Feates of Marre, then to goe a Hawking. And comming towarde the Cittie, he entred in the night season: where secretly he dealt with the Estate of the Citie in Councell, what was most necessarie to be done, and then he departed agayne, to the place where Captayne *Castro* was: with whome he concluded, to sende a Messenger to *Pedro Asueres*, Lieutenaunt of Charcas, to wyll him to ryse on the behalfe of his Maiestie: and then the sayde *Gomer de Tordoya*, with all his power, went after *Pedro Alua-rez Holguin*: who was gone with a hundred men, to encounter with certayne Indians, and with good happe he ouertoke him: at which mēeting he certified him of the newes at Cusco, besēething him to accept the charge of so iuste and honourable an Enterprise, as to be

they^r

theyr generall and chéefe Ruler ouer theyr Hoſte: in conſideration whereof, he alſo offered to be his Soldiour and the firſt man that ſhould obey him. Upon which requeſt, *Pedro Aluares* accepted the charge, & incontinent ſpread his Enſigne in the behalfe of his Maieſtie. And this being done, they conuocated the inhabitauntes of the Cittie of Arequipa, with whome they went to Cuſco: where, at theyr comming, they found many congregated on the behalfe of *Don Diego*, who forthwith fled towardes him, to the number of fiftie perſonnes. After whome followed Captayne *Caſtro* and *Hernando de Bachiaco*, with certayne Hargabuſiers, who ouertoke them in the night ſeaſon, and apprehended them with whome they returned to Cuſco.

The Councell of Cuſco hearing of this good ſucceſſe: came and ioyfully receyued him, and with conformitie of all the Captaynes, bothe ſwore and chooſe *Pedro Aluares Holguin* for Captayne and chéefe Judge of all the dominions of Peru, vntyll ſuch tyme as his Maieſtie ſhould otherwyſe prouide, whereupon warre was proclaymed againſt *Don Diego* and his retinew. The Cittizens alſo of Cuſco bound themſelues to paie all ſuch ſummes of money which he ſhould ſpend of the Kings Treaſure among his Soldiours, if that his Maieſtie ſhould not thinke well or accept the ſame in iuſt and lawfull accoumpt. And for the furniſhing of theſe procédinges, all the Cittizens of Charcas, Arequipa, and Cuſco, offered theyr goodes and perſonnes, ſo that in ſhorte ſpace there ioyned together, aboue. 350. men, of whome were. 150. Horſemen, a hundred Hargabuſiers, and a hundred Pykemen.

But notwithſtanding, *Pedro Aluares*, hauing intelligence howe *Don Diego* had eyght hundred men and more in his Campe, he therefore durſt not abyde his comming in the Cittie of Cuſco: but rather chooſe to paſſe with his power into the Mountaynes, to ioyne with *Alonſo de Aluarado*, who lykewiſe was ryſen on the behalfe of his Maieſtie,

and also, expecting there to méete with the frendes and seruitors of the Marquesse, which were hydden in those Desartes. So that he proceeded with his company in good order, meaning that if *Don Diego* should happen to méete him on his way, to giue him battayle.

And when he departed from Cusco, he left for the defence of the Cittie, as many men as was thought sufficient, for that purpose, he appoynted *Gomez de Tordoya* for Campe maister, and *Garcilaso Delauega*, and *Pedro Asuerez* for Captaynes of the Horsemen, and the charge of the Infauterie or Fotemen he commended to Captaine *Castro*, and the Offices of *Alerez* of the Standard royall, he committed to *Martine de Rolles*.

How *Don Diego* went to seeke *Pedro Aluarez*, and finding him not, he passed to *Cusco*. Chap. 12.

Don Diego, hauing vnderstanding of the proceedinges in Cusco, and how *Pedro Aluarez* was departed out of the Cittie, with all the power that he might make: wherupon he iudged that he was gone into the Mountaynes, to ioyne with *Alonso de Aluarado*, so that he determyned to méete him on the way, and to stoppe his passage: the which his pretence he could not bring to passe, with such expedition as he desired, for staying for *Garcia de Aluarado*, whome he had sent for by Poste, at whose cõming they left proceeding after *Alonso de Aluarado*, and at the tyme when they came to the Cittie of Trugillio, he was mynded againe to disturbe his passage, had not the Towne of Leuanto, which standeth in Chachapoyas, perswaded him to the contrarie.

When *Garcia dẽ Aluarado* was come to the Citie of the Kinges, *Don Diego* forthwith toke his iourney against *Pedro Aluarez* with three hundred Horsemen, one hundred Hargabusiers, and a hundred and fiftie Pikemen.

But

But before his departure, he banished out of the Coũtrey, the Lord Marquesse children, and beheaded *Antonio Picado*, after that he had extreamely racked him, and put him to sundry tormentes, onely that he should confesse where the Lord Marquesse Treasure lay. This done, he procéeded on his iorney: but before he had passed two leagues from thence, came secretly certayne prouisions from the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, which were sent from the coũtrey of Cuito, directed to father *Thomas de Saint Martine*, & *Francisco de Barrio Nueuo*, giuing vnto them thereby authoritie to deale in the gouernment of the Countrey, vntyll that he him selfe might come thether.

Wherupon the Estate and Councell of the Cittie had secrete conference, obaying the prouicions which were at that instant orderly presented, and admitted the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro* for Gouernor, and *Geronimo de Aliaga* for his Lieutenaunt, because he was so appointed by lyke prouisions: After the doing of these things, the Aldermen fled to the Cittie of Trugillio, and many other Cittizens in theyr company: these things were not so secretly done, but the same night *Don* Diego had vnderstanding of all at large, whereupon he was minded to returne to sacke the Cittie: but fearing least *Pedro Aluarez* should escape him, he durst not retyre, and likewise, because his Soldiours should not come to the knowledge, how there was a new gouernour in the land: So that for these causes he procéeded forwarde: yet notwithstanding, when newes was knowen in *Don* Diego his Campe, many of his Soldiours fled from him: especially, Father *Thomas de Saint Martine*, *Diego de Alguero*, *Iuan de Sayauedra*, *Gomez de Aluarado*, and the Factor, *Yllansucarez de Carauaiall*: in this iourney happened to fall sick *Iuan de* Herrada of a certaine infirmitie, wherof he died. By meane wherof *Don* Diego was forced to stay his iorney, & in the meane while, *Pedro Aluarez* passed by into ẏ valley of Xauxa, where *Don* Diego thought to haue abode his comming: yet at the length he followed

him, so that they were not farre a sunder, the one from the other.

Pedro Aluares, imagining by coniecture, that he was not sufficiently manned to encounter with *Don Diego*, he vsed this pollicie, to deceyue him in this sort: He appointed twentie Horsemen on a night, to enter vpon the face of the Vantgarde of *Don Diego*, to apprehende as many of his men as they possible might, the which his cõmaundement was accordingly done: and in the assault they toke three mẽ prisoners, which they brought away with them, of the which *Pedro Aluares* cõmaunded to hang two, and the thirde he promised to pardon, and to giue him a thousand Poyzes in golde, on cõdition that he should goe to the Campe of *Don Diego*, & there to giue warning to as many of his frends as he might, to be in a readinesse to ayde him, for that the next night following, he meant to enter *Don Diego* his Campe, on the right hand. And for the performance of this facte, the Soldiour made a solempne oathe: For *Pedro Aluares* fayned that he had put in him his faithfull and speciall trust, not to discouer his secrets. Wherupon the young man, with the desire of the thousãd Poyzes, departed to accomplishe his promise, and being Soldiour to *Don Diego*, he passed so much the more surer on his way. Pollicie.

When *Don Diego* saw his Soldiour come, & by him vnderstode how *Pedro Aluares* had hanged two of his men, & that he had released that one man, without any speciall cause knowen, he fell in suspition of the matter, and therupon brought his Soldiour to the Rack, who then opened all the secrets that was committed vnto him, vnto whose sayinges *Don Diego* gaue credite, thinking all to be true that was confessed. Wherupon the night following, he prepared all his force on that hand, where he thought *Pedro Aluares* would haue entred: but God wot, *Pedro Aluares* meant no such thing, for as sone as he had dispatched the Spie, the night being darke, he remoued his Campe,

Campe, and with all possible haste proceeded on his way, leauing the enimie expecting all the night long, when he should be assaulted, vntyll at length he sawe how he was deceiued, and laughed to scorne, so that then he also remoued his Campe, and continewed on his way, with great haste after him. When *Pedro Aluares* vnderstode ỹ speed that his enimie made: he sent a Poste to *Alonso de Aluarado*, praying him to come and succour him. Who as sone as the Poste had done his Message vnto him: he came with all his power to ayde his frende *Pedro Aluares*. But when *Don Diego* vnderstode, ỹ bothe his contraries were ioyned with all theyr force, he ceassed from following of them, and toke his way towarde Cusco. Then *Pedro Aluares*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, sent theyr Messengers to Guito, with aduertisement of all theyr procedinges, to *Vaca de Castro*, beseeching him to make speede to come vnto them, promising that with Gods helpe, they would deliuer the Countrey vnto him.

In Xauxa deceassed *Iuan de Herrada*, and *Don Diego* sent some part of his Hoast by the way of the plaines, to ioyne with the inhabitants of Arequipa, whether his Captains also went, who robbed & spoyled all ỹ they might lay hold on in the Cittie, yea, and not contented with the ritches which they found aboue grounde, they digged and delued in Churches, because some there were that had informed, how the Cittizens had buried theyr Treasure there.

How *Vaca de Castro*, came to the Campe of *Pedro Aluares*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, and was by them receyued for Gouernour, and what followed. Chap. 13.

THe euyll successe of *Vaca de Castro*, in his Nauigation, hath bene already declared, how comming from Panama, to passe into Peru, he happened to lose an Anker, whereby his Shippe roade at an extremitie. By

meanes whereof, he was forced to arriue at the Port, called *Buena Ventura*, which is asmuch to say: as, the Port of good Fortune, and from thence he came to the gouernation of Benalcasar, and so into Peru: In which iourney, he passed much trouble, because the way was long, and vnprouided of victualles, and he also weake of infirmity, and not accustomed to such kinde of diet: yet notwithstanding, the premisses, in Popayan, he had vnderstanding of the Marquesse death, and of all the successe of the affayres in Peru: in consideration wherof, he continewed daily on his iourney, hoping that with his presence, all discord should ende.

It is to be vnderstode, that although the Lycenciate *Vaca de Castro*, his comming, was principally to make informatiõ of the death of *Don Diego de Almagro*, & of all such thinges which had happened concerning the same, without suspending the Marquesse gouernment. Yet moreouer, he had secret Letters Patents, in such sort, that if in the meane whyle that he abode in that Countrey, should happen the Marquesse to decease, and leaue this mortall life: that then he should take and exercise his rome and charge, vntyll his Maiestie should otherwise prouide. By vertue of which Letters Patent, he was accepted & receyued, as sone as he was come to the Campe of *Pedro Aluarez*, and *Alonso de Aluarado*, where also were many others, that hauing notice of his comming, came thether to receyue him.

He brought in his company, Captayne *Lorenso de Aldana*, who was at that instant gouernour in Cuito, by the appointment of the Marquesse: From hence he sent, before his departure *Pedro de Puelles*, to prepare all furniture necessarie for the Warres: he dispatched also *Gomez de Roias*, borne in the Towne of Cuellar, with his power and prouisions, directed to the Rulers of the Cittie of Cusco: requiring them to admitte him according to the contentes thereof, who made such haste on his iourney, that he came

to

to the Cittie, before *Don Diego*, and aſcited the Cittizens with his meſſage, which was wyllingly accepted.

When *Vaca de Caſtro* paſſed by Bracamoros, Captaine *Pedro de Vargara*, who was occupied in the cõqueſt of that Prouince, came and ſubmitted him ſelfe vnto him, and to ſerue him, he left a Towne which he had newly inhabited without people, in which Towne he had once fortified him ſelfe, meaning there to reſiſt the force of *Don Diego de Almagro*. Whẽ *Vaca de Caſtro* was come to the Citie of Trugillio: he found there *Gomez de Tordoya*, who was lately come from the Campe about certaine words which he had paſſed with *Pedro Aluarez*, & with him were *Garcilaſſo de la Vega* and other Gentlemen.

At the inſtaunt when *Vaca de Caſtro* departed from Trugillio to goe to the Cãpe of *Pedro Aluarez*, he had in his company aboue two hundred men of warre well furniſhed: as ſone as he was come to the Campe, bothe *Pedro Aluarez*, and *Alonſo de Almarado* receyued him ioyfully: and after that he had ſhewed the Emperours order vnto them, they delyuered incontinent their Enſignes vnto him, and he forthwith reſtored them againe, ſauing the royall Standard which he kept for him ſelfe.

This done, he appointed *Pedro Aluares Holguin* Campe maiſter, and ſent him with all the Armie to Xauxa, to abide there his further order, whyliſt he went downe to the Cittie of the kinges, to gather together all ſuch men, Armour & Munitiõ, which there he might finde, leauing the Cittie furniſhed. He comaunded alſo ỹ Captaine *Diego de Roias* ſhould alwayes goe twentie leagues before the Armie, with thirty lyght Horſemen, to diſcouer the way: he ſent lykewiſe *Diego de Mora* for Lieutenant of the Cittie of Trugillio, and with great dexteritie & diligence, he prouided all other thinges neceſſarie for his pretended enterpriſe now in hand, euen as though all his life time, he had bene brought vp in the Warres.

How

Howe *Don Diego* slewe *Garcia de Aluarado* in *Cusco*, and howe he came out of the Cittie with his Armie, against *Vaca de Castro*. Chap. 14.

IT hath bene declared, howe that after that *Don Diego*, sawe that he could not ouertake *Pedro Aluares*, he went to Cusco: but before his comming, *Christouall de Sotelo*, who he had sent before him, had taken possession of the Cittie, and placed the Officers of Iustice, according to his owne pleasure, and vnplaced such as were appointed by *Vaca de Castro*: As sone as *Don Diego* was come to the Cittie, he began to gather all the Artillerie, and Gunpouder that he might come by.

In Peru, there is good prouision to make Ordenaunce, by reason of the aboundaunce of Mettall, which there is founde: and also at that tyme there were certayne Leuantiscos, who were cunning Maisters in casting of Artyllerie, and also expert in the making of Gunpouder, whereof they had store, by the meane of the great quantitie of Salt peeter, which there is found.

Ye also made Weapon for such as wanted, of passe of Siluer & Copper, mixed together, & of the same stuffe they wrought exceeding good Corselets: besides this prouision, all the Armor of the Countrey was brought to his Cãpe, so ỹ he furnished two hundred Hargabusiers. Ye also ordained certaine men of Armes, although vntyll this time they vsed in Peru, to fight on Horseback, after the Genet facion, & seldome vsed to skyrmish with lyght Horsemen.

Being in this readinesse, happened a certaine discorde betweene Captaine *Garcia de Aluarado*, and *Christouall de Sotelo*, in the which, *Sotelo* was slaine, whereupon great mischeefe was lyke to ensue, among the Soldiours, because each of them had many frends, so that all the whole Campe was deuided.

So

ſo that if *Don Diego* with amorous wordes had no pacified the matter, thei had one ſlain an other. Notwithſtanding *Garcia de Aluarado*, vnderſtoode that *Don Diego* was greatly affectioned to *Sotelo*, and would not let to reuenge his quarell. Wherfore, from that tyme forward, he had the greater regard to loke to his owne ſafetie, not onely for the defence of his perſone, but likewiſe, mynded to kill *Don Diego*, the whiche he his pretence, he determined to put in execution. So that on a daie he inuited hym to Dimer, purpoſyng to kille hym in his diete. But *Don Diego* ſuſpectyng the matter, faigned that he was not well at eaſe, after that he had excepted the banket.

When *Garcia de Aluarado* ſawe that his deuiſe could take no place, hauyng all thyng in a readineſſe for his pretended enterpriſe, he determined with diuers of his frendes, to goe and to importune hym co come to the banket, and in the waie as he went, he chanced to diſcloſe his minde to one *Martine Carillio*, who perſwaded hym, not to proceede vpon that iourney, for, ſaye he, I feare you will bee ſlaine: an other ſouldiar likewiſe gaue hym the ſame counſell, but all their aduiſe could not preuaile. *Don Diego* fained hym ſelf ſicke, and laie hym doune vpon his bed, hauyng ſecretly in an other chamber certaine armed men. So that when *Garcia de Aluarado* entered the chamber with his cõpanie, he ſaied vnto *Don Diego*, ſir, if it maie pleaſe your lordſhip to ariſe, for your ſickneſſe is nothing, you ſhall alſo find eaſe, if you will recreate your ſelf awhile, for although you eate nothing, yet you ſhall garniſhe our table. Unto whõ *Dõ Diego* anſwered that he was content, and forthwith aroſe and called for his cloake: For he laye vpon his bedde hauyng on his priuie coate, his Rapier and Dagger. *Garcia de Aluarado* and the reſidue, were goyng out at the Chamber dooze, but when the moſte of them were cleane without the dooze, and as *Aluerado* was paſſyng out before *Don Diego*, *Iuan de Herrada* whiche ſtood nert the doze, ſtaied his goyng out, and made the doze faſt, whiche lockt without any keye, and therevpon tooke *Garcia de Aluarado* in his armes, ſaiyng: yeeld thy ſelf for priſoner, and then *Don Diego* drewe his Rapier and ſtrake hym, ſaiyng: he ſhall not bee priſoner, but rather ſlaine. And then came forthe

Iuan Balsa, *Alonso de Sayauedra*, and *Diego Mendez*, brother to *Rodrigo Orgonios*, and others of thē which were in ambush, who gaue hym so many woundes that he was soone dead.

When this newes was knowne in the Citie, there began a broile emong them. But when *Don Diego* came out into the Market place of the Citie, he quieted the people: yet notwithstanding many of *Garcia de Alnarado* his freendes fled awaie. After this successe *Don Diego* proceeded out of the Citie with his armie, to encounter with *Vaca de Castro*, whom he vnderstood had ioyned with *Pedro Alnaaez*, and *Alonso de Alnarado*, and was cōmyng the waie of Xauxa to meete with hym.

In all this iornney *Paulo* brother to *Inga* serued Dō Diego, who *Don Diego de Almagro* the elder now deceassed, had instituted *Inga*, whose aide was of greate importance: Because alwaies he went before the Campe. And although he had but fewe Indians in cōpanie, yet all the Prouinces in the land had respect vnto hym, and for his sake thei prouided bothe victualls and Indians to carie the fardage, and other necessarie thinges.

How *Vaca de Castro* departed from the citie of the Kinges to Xauxa, and what his doynges were whilest he he abode there. Chapt. 15.

After that *Vaca de Castro* came to the citie of the kinges, he caused many Bargabuzes to be made hauyng at that instant many commyng maisters fit for the purpose. He furnished hym also of all other necessaries, for the prouision whereof, he borowed of marchantes the somme of 60000. poizes of gold, because *Don Diego* had spent all the kyngs treasure, before his commyng. When all thinges were in a readinesse, *Vaca de Castro* left in the citie of the Kynges for his Lieutenant *Francisco de Barrio Nueuo*, and *Ihon Perez de Guenarra* for captaine of the Naute, and then he tooke his iourney with all his power toward Xauxa, leauing order in the citie: that if *Don Diego* should happen to come vpon the citie, by any other waie not expected, as some did imagine that he would, that then all the Citezens

with

with their wiues, children, families, and goodes, ſhould goe about the ſhippes, vntill ſuche tyme as he with his armie ſhould followe hym, to giue hym battaile. At his comyng to Xauxa, he found *Pedro Aluarez* abidyng his comyng with all his men of warre, whiche he there furniſhed with Armor, Pikes, and gonpouder, that there he had cauſed to be made. Then *Vaca de Caſtro* deuided the horſemen, whiche he had brought with hym, betwene *Pedro Aluarez*, *Pedro Anſuerez*, and *Garcilaſo de la Vega*, whom he ordeined captaines of the horſemen, and part of the footemen he commended to *Pedro de Vargas*, and *Nunio de Caſtro*, who were appointed, for captaines of infauterie. He likewiſe, ordeined other two companies, the one of horſemen, which he aſſigned to *Gomes de Aluarado*, & the other of hargabuziers which he appointed to the Bachellier *Iuan Velez de Gueuara*, who although he were a Lawier, yet he was an excellent good ſouldiar, and of an excedyng good induſtrie: For he it was, that deuiſed to make the Hargabuzes, for the ſouldiars of his companie, and neuertheleſſe did exercyſe alſo his vocatiõ towardes the law. For it did appere that he was in thoſe daies appointed Iudge, whiche office he did vſe in the fore noone of euery daie, & at the after noone he apparelled him ſelf as a good Souldiar, in hoſe and dublet of colours, enbrodred with gold, whiche becam him erceding well, with his Ierken and plume of fethers, with his Hargabuze on his ſhulder, exercyſyng bothe hym and his men, in the practiſe of their peeces.

In this forme *Vaca de Caſtro* ordeined his hoſte, the which were in nõber 700 men, whereof were 370 horſemen, a 170 Hargabuziers, and the reſidue were footemẽ. He appointed for cheef ſariant of the Campe, *Franciſco de Caranajall*, who after ward was campe maiſter to *Gonſalo Piſarro*. By whoſe order the whole hoaſte was gouerned, becauſe he was experte in the warres, & had exerciſed the experiẽces of a ſouldiar aboue xl. yeres, he had likewiſe borne office of liutenant, of captain in Italy.

In this meane while came meſſengers to *Vaca de Caſtro*, from *Gonſalo Piſarro*, who had returned vnto Quito, from the diſcouerie of the land of Zinamon, as before hath been declared by the ſaied meſſengers: he ſignified vnto hym how he ment to

aide hym with all his force. Unto whom *Vaca de Castro* wrote, giuyng hym moste hartie thankes, for his gentle offer: praiyng hym, that he would not trouble hym self, but rather at that present abide in Quito, because, q̄ he, I hope to come to some good ende with Dō *Diego*, and that he will submit him self to his maiesties seruice. This aunswere he made, thinkyng to bridle the presumption of *Gonsalo Pisarro*, and also he like wise, imagined that his cōmyng would hinder the agrement with *Don Diego*, because *Pisarro* might hope of some reuenge, and for that consideration also, *Don Diego* would feare to yeeld hym self. Others helde opinion, that if *Gonsalo Pisarro* should happen to come to the Campe, that then he would presume to take vpon hym the office of Generall, beyng a man so well beloued emōg the Commonaltie, all these thinges considered, *Vaca de Castro* commaunded that the Lorde Marques his children should remaine in the custodie, and charge of their Tutors, in the Cities of saint Mighell and Trugillio, and in nowise come to the Citie of the Kynges, vntill other order should be taken: because the securitie of their persones was there more certain, then in Lynia.

How *Vaca de Castro* proceded with his hoste frō Xauxa to Guamanga, and what passed betweene hym and *Don Diego*. Chapt. 16.

When *Vaca de Castro*, had set in order his armie in Xauxa, he proceded towardes *Guamanga*, in whiche iourney he had vnderstandyng how *Don Diego* was commyng towarde hym, and either to take the Towne, or els to plant him self with his power to hinder his passage at a Riuer, whiche of force he should passe, so that in the takyng of either of them, the anoiance should haue been great to the enemie: because the toune is enuironed with valleies of greate depth, whiche did exceedingly fortifie. But Captaine *Diego de Rojas*, who with his companie led the waie, forsawe those daungers, who also had knowledge of the pretence of *Don Diego*, and thereupon in shorte space built there a Tower, to abide the commyng of *Vaca de Castro*, who haupng intelligence thereof, made the more haste, sendyng be-

fore

foꝛe Captaine *Caſtro*, with certaine hargubuzers to foꝛtifie a-nother euill peece of waie, whiche ſtood not farre frõ Guamãga called the hill of Parcas. When *Vaca de Caſtro*, on an euenyng came within two Leagues of Guamanga, he was aduiſed that the ſame night, *Don Diego* ment to enter into the Towne, this newes contented hym not, becauſe a greate parte of his armie were farre behinde, ſo that *Alonſo de Aluarado* was foꝛced to returne to gather them together, and when he had ſo doen, he came with them in good oꝛder, although ſome had iourneyed the ſame daie moꝛe then fiue Leagues, armed, with great paine and trauaile, by reaſon that the waie was aſperous with Rocks and Creckes deſcendyng betweene hilles, ſo that at length thei paſſed by the towne, and lodged all that night on the other ſide in their armour, becauſe thei had no certaine newes from their enemies, vntill the next daie that the Camp was aſſured by the ſcoutes, who had diſcouered moꝛe then fiue Leagues of groũd, and bꝛought like wiſe aduertiſement, how *Don Diego* was at the leaſt nine Leagues from their Campe. Whereupon *Vaca de Caſtro*, wꝛote vnto hym by *Franciſco Diaquez*, bꝛother vn-to *Alonſo Diaquez* ſecretarie to his Maieſtie, whe was come from *Don Diego* his Campe, to pꝛaie and require hym on the behalf of his Maieſtie, that he would accepte and come to yeeld him ſelf vnder the royall ſtandarde, and in ſo doyng and alſo in diſchargyng his armie, he ſhould be pardoned of all his foꝛmer doinges: but if he refuſed his mercifull offer, that then he would pꝛocede againſt hym with all rigoꝛ of iuſtice, as againſt a trai-toꝛ, rebell, and diſloyall ſubiecte to his Pꝛince.

Whileſt this meſſenger was goyng on his affaires, he ſent a footeman by another waie, clothed in the Indians attire, with ſundꝛie letters to many Gentlemen which were with *Dõ Die-go*. But this footemã could not paſſe ſo ſecretly, foꝛ by the pꝛint of his feete paſſyng thꝛough the ſnoe he was knowne, and alſo takẽ pꝛiſoner, who as ſoone as he was bꝛought befoꝛe *Dõ Die-go*, was foꝛthwith commaũded to be hanged, and like wiſe *Don Diego* founde him ſelf greatly agreeued with the ſubtill pollicie and cautell of *Vaca de Caſtro*, conſidering that one waie he delt foꝛ peace, and contrariwiſe he ſent to ſowe mutynie in his Cãp.

Whereupon in presence of the messenger, he ordained al his Captaines and men of warre, throughly furnished to giue the battaile, and proclaimed also, that who soeuer should kill any Citizen, both the wife and Indians of the dead, should be giuen vnto him: this doen, he sent aunswere to *Vaca de Castro*, by the same messenger, & by *Diego de Mercado* ỳ in no wise he would yeeld any obedience vnto hym, whilest his enemies were in his cõpanie, who were, *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, & *Alonso de Aluarado* with their consorts, & likewise he ment not to discharge his armie, vntil he sawe pardon from his Maiestie, firmed with his royall hande: for (qᵗ he) I giue small credite to the auctoritie of father *Garcia de Loaysa* Cardinall of Ciuill, whom I know not for gouernour, nor yet to haue sufficient power in his Maiesties absence, for any cause appertaining to India. And where he thought through his subtill practise, that the Gentlemen of his armie would passe vnto hym, he was therein deceiued. But rather that he should thinke, that with greate courage thei all expected the battaile, and would defend the Countrey against all the worlde, as by experience he should finde, if he durst abide the same: and now (qᵗ he) I am on my waie to seeke hym.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* brought into the field, his whole power to stande to battaile, and what happened vnto hym. Chap. 17.

When *Vaca de Castro*, had heard the embassage came from *Don Diego*, and also considered his pertinacie, he marched with his whole power into a plaine called Chupas, which stood without the boũdes of *Guamanga*, which place was very vnfit or asperous to fight a battaile in. In this plaine of Chupas he abode three daies, in which space, it ceased not from rainyng, because it was thẽ the middest of winter, and the souldiers attended alwaies armed, because ỳ enemies were at hande, so that hap, what hap might, he determined to abide the battaile, seing that no other meane could be had, he also stood in doubt of some of his men, who had been tofore in the battaile of Salinas, saiyng that his Maiestie had not accepted of their doynges,

doynges, conſideryng that *Hernando Piſarro*, as yet remained priſoner.

But now to iuſtifie his doynges, he pronounced ſentence openly againſt *Don Diego*, wherein he condempned hym for a Traitor and Rebell, and to ſuffer paines of death and loſſe of goodes, with like penaltie to all his retinewe, with this iudgement and ſentence he required all the Captaines to aide and aſſiſt hym, to execute the ſame.

The nexte daie in the morning, the ſkoutes gaue warning to prepare for battaile, affirming that the enemies were at hande, who had lodged the ſame night before, but onely two Leagues from their Campe, and now came marching on their left hand to eſcape certaine bogges, for to attain vnto a plaine that ſtood vpon a loine of hilles, which were in frent of the Campe of *Vaca de Caſtro*, meanyng to take the Towne of Guamanga, before the battaile ſhould be giuen, deeming the victorie to be ſure on his ſide, by reaſon of the greate force of artillerie whiche he brought with hym.

But when thei came ſo nigh together, ẏ the ſkoutes might talke one with an other, *Vaca de Caſtro* ſent Captaine *Caſtro* with fiftie hargubuzers to ſkirmiſhe with the enemie, whileſt the Enſignes might paſſe certaine hilles, whiche of force they ſhould goe with greate perrill, for if at that inſtant *Don Diego* had encountered them, their damage had bin greate, by meane of the Ordnaunce which would haue made a marueilous ſpoile among the footemen, ſo that to auoide this perill and to come to the top of the hill with greate expedition. *Franciſco de Carauaiall*, who then was chiefe Sariant, ordained that each Enſigne without reſpect of warlike order, ſhould make all ſpeede poſſible to get vp to the hill top, fearing the daunger that might haue happened with the prolongyng the waie.

This counſell was obaied and followed, and whileſt the hargubuzers of captaine *Caſtro* were ſkirmiſhyng, the footemen came to the hill top. In this ſorte the whole force of his armie atchiued their purpoſe, and planted them ſelues in order of battaile vpon the ſaied hill.

How

How *Vaca de Castro* set forward his Squadrons against *Don Pedro*, for to giue the battaile. Chapt. 18.

After that *Vaca de Castro*, sawe all his armie on the toppe of the hille, he commaunded the Cheef Seriant, that he should ordeine the Squadrons, the whiche accordyngly was doen. *Vaca de Castro*, saied vnto them: That firste thei should consider who thei were, from whence thei came, and for whom thei should fight, and likewise to consider, that at that instance the whole force of that Countrey and Empire, was onely in the strength of their armes. And more ouer, if it should please God that thei should bee ouercome, that then death was the equall reward for theim all. But if, qᵗ he, the victorie bee ours, wee shall not onely shewe our selues loyall, and faithfull Subiectes to our Prince, but also remaine Lordes ouer the landes and treasure, whiche our enemies now possesse, and I for my parte, by the auctoritie whiche I haue from his Maiestie, and in his royall name, doe assure ye all the same. For, saied he, our soueraigne desireth this laude, for no other purpose, but onely to remunerate all suche, whiche faithfully shall serue his Maiestie, and I also knowe, that I neede not, to exhort and perswade you to this enterprise, beyng Gentlemen of noble parentage, for your valliaunte hartes, and commendable courage, hath alwaies shewed your true and faithfull meanyng. An now I my selfe will be, by Gods helpe, your leader, to breake the firste lance.

When the Generall *Vaca de Castro* had made an ende of his breef Oration: Thei aunswered with one voice and greate courage, that thei were all readie to obaye his cõmaundement, and that by the helpe of God, thei would rather be cut in peeces, then to bee ouercome, because qᵗ thei, eche of vs doe take this warre in hande, as proper to euery of vs. This doen, the Captaines besought *Vaca de Castro*, not to enter into the Vantgard: for qᵗ thei, in no wise we will consent thereto. But rather we beseche you to abide with the Reregard with thirtie horsemenne, for to succour where greatest neede shall require. And when he had heard their importunate sute, he graunted their

requeſt.

requeſt. And alſo conſideryng that the daie was ſpent, and that onely one howre and a half remained of the daie, the night was ſo nigh at hande, he would gladly haue delaied the battaile till the next daie.

But Captaine *Alonſo de Aluarado* ſaied vnto hym: ſir, if this night the battaile be not fought, we ſhall al periſhe: and ſith the hartes of your men are already determined, ſtaie you not for an other conſultation. *Vaca de Caſtro* liked well his counſaile, but yet he feared the want of the daie light, ſaiyng: Oh would to God, that now I had the power of Ioſue, to ſtaie the Sunne. In the meane while, *Don Diego* began to ſhote his artillarie, becauſe, for to ioyne battail, the contrary ſide could not come doune the hille, without greate daunger of the men, euen as a plaine marke to be ſhot at.

But the cheef Seriant and *Alonſo de Aluarado*, ſought out on the left hande a ſure entrie, whiche deſcended into a valley, where thei might at will ſette vpon their enemies, without perill of the Ordinaunce, whiche ſhott paſſed cleane ouer their heds, ſo that the Squadrons came doune in order, in this wiſe.

The right hande, had *Alonſo de Aluarado*, who with his compyanie attended on the roiall Standarde: of which, was *Alferez, Chriſtoual de Barrientos* borne in the Citie, called Ciudad Rodrigo, and now was a citezen of the Citie of Trugillio. The left ſide was commended to theſe fower captaines, *Pedro Aluarez Holgui, Gomes de Aluarado, Garcilaſo de la Vega Pedro Anſuerez*, eche of them carriyng in good order their ſtandardes, and companies, and thei thẽ ſelues went in the firſt rowes. And in the midſt of the horſemen went the Captaines *Pedro de Vergara*, and *Iuan Velez de Gueuara*, with the Infauterie, and *Nunio de Caſtro* went the Hargabuziers, in the foremoſte front to begynne with ſkirmiſh, and to retire to their Squadron, when tyme ſhould require.

Vaca de Caſtro aboade in the reregarde with his thirtie horſemen, ſomewhat a farre off from the power of the battaile, ſo that alwaies he might ſuccour where he ſhould ſee greateſt neede, as in effect he did.

How the battaile of Chupas was fought. Chapt. 19.

WHileſt the Armie of *Vaca de Caſtro* marched towarde the enemie, who ceaſſed not in ſhooting of his Ordinaunce: whiche ſhotte paſſed on high, cleane ouer the armie of *Vaca de Caſtro*. Whereupon *Don Diego* ſuſpected, that *Candia* who was Maiſter Gunner, had been ſuborned, and that therefore willyngly, he diſcharged his ordinaunce in ſuche ſorte: ſo that without any further hearyng of the matter, he ſlewe the Gonner with his owne handes, and when he had ſo doen, he hym ſelf ſhotte of a peece of Ordinance whiche entred into one of the Squadrons, and ſlue many of thē.

When Captaine *Caranajall* conſidered, that their Artillarie could not bee brought with ſuche ſpeede, as tyme required: he determined with his companie to leaue it behinde them, and to enter the battaile without any longer delaye, or beneſite of their Ordenaunce.

At

At this inſtant *Don Diego* and his Captaines *Iuan Balſa*, *Iuan Tellio*, *Diego Mendez*, *Diego de Hoces*, *Martyn de Bilbao*, *Iuan de Ollo*, and the reſidue: had placed their horſemen in twoo Squadrons, and betweene theim the Squadron of the Infauterie, and their greate Ordinaunce in front, towarde the place, where *Vaca de Caſtro* was thought to giue the onſette. And demyng it a cowardie, to ſtaie any longer, the Squadrõs marched on with the Artillarie, towarde the face of the force of *Vaca de Caſtro*, cleane againſt the will, and opinion of *Pedro Suarez* cheef Seriant of his Armie, who beeyng a manne experte in the warres, liked not their doynges: for as ſoone as he ſawe the ſettyng forwarde of the Ordenaunce, he iudged the feeld to be loſte. Becauſe in the place where before the Campe was pitched, there was ſpace ſufficient for the Artillarie, to offende at will, before the enemie might come nere, and with proceadyng forwarde, thei afforce loſte their benefite of the Ordenaunce, and ſo came without diſcretion vpon the power of their aduerſaries. When *Pedro Suarez* ſawe that thei would not accepte and followe his counſell: he ſette ſpurres to his horſe, and fledde to the parte of *Vaca de Caſtro*.

In this meane while, *Paulo*, brother vnto *Lynga* encountered with *Vaca de Caſtro* on the left hande of his armie, with a greate companie of Indian Souldiars, who ſhot with dartes and throwyng of ſtones with ſlynges and other engines. But the hargubuzers whiche were placed for tyme of neede, ſet vpõ them and ſlewe many: whereupon thei began to flee, in whoſe place entered *Martin Cote*, Captaine of the hargubuzers of *Don Diego*, who began to ſkirmiſh with the companie of captaine *Caſtro*, and the Squadrõs proceded by the ſounde of their drummes, till thei came to the place where thei abode, whileſt the Ordnaunce was ſhot of: whiche was doen with ſuche furie that thei could not breake ſo ſone as thei would: and althogh thei were within ſhot, yet thei receiued thereby no damage, ſauyng the companie of footemen whiche were placed on high ground, ſo that the Ordnaunce made a greate ſpoyle among them, and forced the Squadron to open: yet notwithſtandyng, the Captaines with greate diligence cauſed them to ioyne againe.

In this meane while, *Francisco de Carauajall* chiefe Seriant, stated the Captaines of his side, vntill all the Ordnaunce was discharged, and then the horsemen going vp a little plot of high grounde, met with the hargubuziers of *Don Diego*, who at this instant slue *Pedro Aluarez Holguin*, and *Gruiez de Tordoya* with two bullets, and wounded many others. When Captaine *Pedro de Vergara* felt hym self hurte with the shot of a hargubuze, he began to crye vnto the Squadrons of horsmen to breake, for if (q he) ye delaie any longer all your footemen will be spoyled. Wherupon the Trumpets sounded to breake, and immediatly the horsemen of *Vaca de Castro*, encountered with the horsemen of *Don Diego* with greate courage, in suche wise that thei brake on both sides almoste all their launces, and many were slaine and vnhorsed on eache side: when their launces failed, thei ioyned with force of sworde and battaile axe, in suche wise, that thei fought with many a bloodie stroke, till thei were well nigh brethlesse, and therupon forced to rest a while.

The Captaines of the footemen of *Vaca de Castro* his side, beganne also to encounter with those of *Don Diego*, hauing no feare or respecte of the Ordnaunce, by meane of Captaine *Carauajall*, who valiantly encouraged them, saying, feare ye not the shot more thē I doe, for ye see (q he) I am a grose and a fat man, and a better marke to be shot at then ye are, and because ye shall not thinke that I trust in my armour, beholde my doing, and thereupon he put of a coate of maile whiche he had on hym, and also his hedpeece, remaining in his dublet and hose, and in this sorte he led his companie on the face of the artillerie, who followed with suche courage, that in shorte space thei won it, and slewe many of those that had the charge thereof, and then ioyned in battaile with the contrarie side so valiantly, that the victorie was onely attributed vnto hym.

At this instant, the night approched and begā to ware darke, so that skarcely one knewe an other, but onely by their watche worde. The horsemen likewise began their fight a fresh, so that then the victorie began to appeare on the behalf of *Vaca de Castro*, who with his thirtie Horsemen gaue the onset on the left hande, where were twoo firme Ensignes of *Don Diego*, who cried

cried victorie on their ſide: Notwithſtandyng, all the other Enſignes of *Don Diego* begamne to retire as ouercome, and *Vaca de Caſtro* breakyng in among them, there began a whot fight, in the which, ſome of thoſe thirtie horſemen were wounded and vnhorſed. And alſo Captaine *Xmenez*, *Nicholas Montaluo*, and other Gentlemē were ſlaine. But *Vaca de Caſtro* ſtriuyng for victorie with ſo noble a courage, *Don Diego* and his men begamne to turne their backes and flee, and *Vaca de Caſtro* and his companie followed, among whom he made a greate ſlaughter and wounded many.

When Captaine *Bilbao* and *Criſtoual de Soſa*, who ſerued vnder *Don Diego*, ſawe their ſide to flee, thei receiued ſo greate greefe, that like deſperate men thei entered into the thronge of their enemies, ſaiyng eche of them, I am he that ſlewe the Lord Marques, and in this order thei fought till thei were bothe cut in peeces.

Many of *Don Diego*, his ſide, eſcaped through the darkeneſſe of the night, and alſo with takyng from the dead their coniſance, for *Vaca de Caſtro* gaue vnto his men red ſkarfes, and *Don Diego* gaue vnto his white ſkarfes: in this ſorte the victorie was manifeſtly knowne to be for *Vaca de Caſtro*: notwithſtandyng at the beginnyng of the battaile, *Vaca de Caſtro* loſt many of his men, in ſo much that the victorie was then thought to be on *Don Diego* his ſide. But now in ỹ flight of thoſe which were ouercome, thei fled from one perill and fell into an other: whiche was, as thei eſcaped paſſyng doune into a Valley, the Indian enemies ſlewe a greate nomber of them, and likewiſe a hundred and fiftie horſemen which fled to the Towne of Guamanga, which ſtood diſtant two leagues from the place where the battaile was fought. And there thei were vnarmed, and taken priſoners by thoſe fewe Townes men, which abode behinde to keepe the Towne.

Don Diego, and *Diego Mendez* fled to Cuſco, where thei were apprehended by *Rodrigo de Salazar*, who was his owne Lieutenant, & *Antonio Ruiz de Guenara* Shrieſe of the Citie.

In this ſorte finiſhed the auctoritie and gouernment of *Don Diego*, who in one date ſawe hym ſelf Lorde and Prince ouer

all Peru, and on an other daie (likewise) saw him self prisoner by his owne officers. This battaile was fought the sixtene daie of September. Anno. 1542.

¶ How *Vaca de Castro* gaue thankes vnto his Souldiers, for the victorie which God had giuen them. Chap. 20.

THe greatest parte of the night was spent in gatheryng the Souldiers together, who had beene occupied in the spoyle of *Don Diego* his tentes, where thei founde a greate treasure of golde and siluer, and slewe some whiche thei found hidden, and wounded. When thei were all gathered together, thinking that *Don Diego* would renewe his armie, all the footemen attended in a readinesse, and likewise the horsemen.

Vaca de Castro spent the most parte of the night in the commendation of his Souldiers, and generally (also) his whole armie, and gaue particular thankes to euery of them for their valiant seruice. In this battaile were many Captaines and souldiers, which singulerly did shewe the vallour of their noble hartes: especially, *Don Diego* hopyng to haue the victorie, and also iudgyng his cause to be iust, sithens his quarell was to reuenge his fathers death: yea, he tooke more paines then his age required: for at that instant he was but two and twentie yeares olde. There were also many of his armie that shewed them selues valiant warriers: Likewise many that were with *Vaca de Castro*, shewed in this exploite their noble mindes, & especially to reuēge the Lord Marques his death, who so entirely thei loued.

In this battaile were slaine on bothe sides to the nomber of three hundred men, among whom were many Captaines and men of estimatiō, especially *Pedro Alnarez Holguin*, and *Gomez de Tordoya*, who pretendyng to get honour, and to be singuler in this battaile, were apparelled in white veluet, beset with buttons of golde, which attire was worne vpon their armour, by meane wherof thei were knowne, and the soner slaine by the hargubuziers, as before hath been declared. Likewise *Alonso de Aluarado*, and Captaine *Caranajall* who feared not the greate Ordenaunce, nor any other daunger, where the bullets

of

of ỹ hargubuziers rained like haile: yea, it was thought a thyng vnpoſſible for them to eſcape, ſo that thei diſpiſing death, it ſemed that death fled from them, as often it doeth happen in all perilles, and the fearfull to be ſooneſt intrapped, as in this battaile did plainly appeare: and eſpecially, there was a yong man who feared to enter into the battaile, hid himſelf behinde a rock, where he thought not onely to be ſure, but alſo ſhould not heare the noyſe of the Ordnaunce, & yet by chaũce there came a pellet from the great Ordnaunce, that brake the Rocke & ſle we hym.

The principalleſt that ſhewed their hautie courage, on the behalf of his Maieſtie, beſides thoſe which hath been rehearſed: were the Licenciat, *Benito de Caranajall*, *Iuan de Sayauedra*, *Lorenſo Daldana*, *Franciſco Godoy*, *Diego de Aguilar*, *Bernaldino de Balderama*, *Nicolas de Ribera*, *Hieronimo de Aliaga*, *Iuan de Barbaran*, *Michell de la Serna*, *Lope de Mendoſa*, *Diego Centeno*, *Melchior Verdugo*, *Frãciſco de Barrio Nueno*, the Licenciat *de la Gama*, *Gomez de Aluarado*, *Gaſper Rojas*, *Don Gomez de Luna*, *Paula de Meneſes*, *Iuan Alõſo Palomino*, *Pedro Alõſo Hinojoſa*, *Dõ Pedro Puerto Carero*, Captaine *Caceres*, *Diego Ortiz de Guzman*, *Franciſco de Ampuero*, & many others which were in the firſt rowes of the Squadrons.

¶ Of the iuſtice whiche was executed vpon thoſe of the parcialitie of *Don Diego*. Chap. 21.

THE night of the victorie, happened an exceadyng greate Froſte, by reaſon whereof many of the wounded men, died with cold, eſpecially ſuche as could not come to the Campe, the Indians ſtripped them, and left them naked, without reſpecte either to their freendes, or enemies. And this was the principalleſt ſeruice, that the Indians vſed in theſe battailes, for thei did not onely robb & ſpoile the weake and wounded perſones, but alſo maulled them with their Clubbes. And thyough the darckeneſſe of the Night, the wounded creatures could not bee holpen by their freendes, ſauyng *Gomes de Tordoya*, whiche was not thyoughly dedde, and *Pedro Anſuerez* obtained a Tent: and becauſe the carriage was not then come, the moſte of the Souldiars laye in the feeld

with

without Tententes or succour all that night.

It was a sorrowfull sight to heare and see, the dolefull cries and piteous mone, whiche the wounded menne did make, with the bitter paines of their woundes. There were aboue fower hundred persones wounded, who the nexte daie followyng *Vaca de Castro*, caused to bee cured, as well as he might, and the principallest emong the dedde were carried to bee buried in the Toune of Guamanga. But cheefly he caused the bodies of *Pedro Aluares*, and *Gomes de Tordoya* to be buried with greate pompe and solempnitie.

The same morrnyng followyng, *Vaca de Castro* commaunded certaine of the prisoners to bee behedded, whiche had been accessaries to the Lorde Marques death: and the nexte daie when he came to Guamanga, he founde that Captaine *Diego de Rojas*, had behedded *Iuan de Tello*, and other Captaines of *Don Diego*. *Vaca de Castro* committed the execution of Justice to the Lieutenant *de la Gam*, who hanged and behedded fourtie persones of the cheefest offenders: others he banished, a residue he pardoned, and also that the nomber of those which were executed, amounted to three score persones. This doen, he graunted licence to all the Citezens to goe to their houses: and *Vaca de Castro* went to the Citie of Cusco, where he made new processe against *Don Diego*, and after certaine daies commaunded hym to bee behedded. He like wise released out of prison *Diego Mendez*, with other twoo prisoners, whiche had serued against hym, who as soone as thei were at libertie, went vnto *Inga* into the Mountaines called Andez, whiche through the asperous entrie, are inexpugnable.

Inga receiued them very ioyfully, and shewed greate sorrowe for the death of his frende *Don Diego*, whom he loued exceedingly, as appeared: for when he passed that waie, he gaue vnto hym many shertes of Maile and Corselettes, and other sortes of armor which he had taken from the Christians, which he had ouercome and slaine, when thei went to aide *Gonsalo Pisarro* and *Iuan Pisarro* in Cusco, sent by the Lorde Marques as heretofore hath been declared. He had also Indians disguised at the battaile, to bryng hym newes of the successe thereof.

How

How *Vaca de Caſtro*, ſent to diſcouer the Countrey, by diuerſe wayes. Chap. 22.

THe battayle againſt *Don Diego* béing wonne, and the countrey pacified, *Vaca de Caſtro* deuiſed to deuide his men of Warre: and not hauing wherwith to gratifie them all, except hee ſhould ſend them to conquer abrod in the countrey; wherupon hee commaunded Captayne *Vergara*, that with the company which hee had brought to ſerue his Maieſtie, hee ſhould returne to his conqueſt, of the Bracamoros: hee ſente alſo Captayne *Diego de Rojas*, and *Phillip Gutierez*, with 300. men, Eaſtward, to diſcouer that countrey, which afterward they did inhabite, which countrey ioyneth with the Riuer of Plate.

With Captayne *Monroy*, hee ſent ſuccour to the Prouince of Chili, to Captaine *Pedro de Valdiuia*, hee ſente alſo Captaine *Iuan Perez de Gueuarra*, to conquer the Lande of Mullobamba, which hee tofore had diſcouered, and is a countrey more hilly then playne: out of the ſide of which hilles, ſpringeth two greate riuers, which falleth into the Northen Sea: The one is called Maranion, of the which heretofore wee haue ſpoken: and the other is called the riuer of Plate: the naturall people, of that countrey, are Caniues, which eateth mans fleſh. The countrey is ſo hoat, that the people goe naked, ſauinge light Mantels, which they wrap about their bodies.

In this countrey, *Iuan Perez* had vnderſtandinge of another great Lande, which ſtandeth beyonde thoſe Hilles, toward the North, where are ritch Mynes of Gold, and there bréedeth Cammels, and ſundry ſortes of Powltery, like vnto thoſe of the new Spayne, and alſo ſheepe, ſomewhat leſſer then the Sheepe of Peru, and all their corne ground is watered with ſlewces, becauſe there it ſeldome rayneth: yet there is a maruailous great Lake, frō the which iſſueth many riuers, on the borders wherof, are many villages, repleniſhed with people.

In all those Riuers, are certaine Fishes, like vnto great Mastiffes, which often times doo bite the Indians, which enter into those Riuers, or passe alonge the riuer sides, for they vse to come many times out of the Riuers.

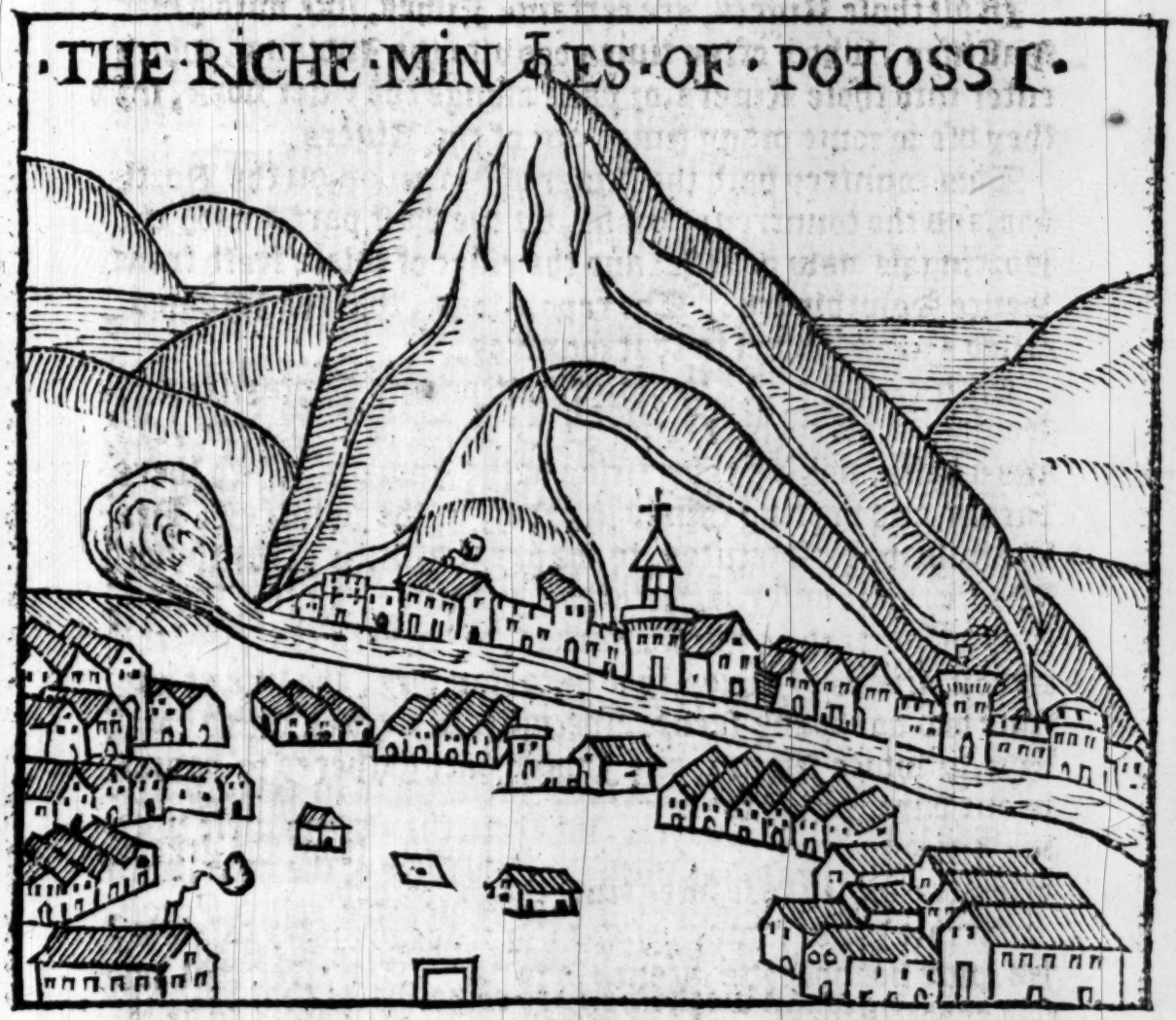
This countrey hath the Riuer of Maranion, on the North side, and the countrey of Brasill, on the East part, which the Portingals now possesse: and the riuer of Plate lyeth from thence Southward. The report was, that the Wemen, called *Amazons*, dwel in that countrey.

Now *Vaca de Castro*, hauing dispatched his Captaynes and Souldiers, on these discoueries, he abode in Cusco one yere and a halfe, making repertition of the Indians, which were vacant, and putting things in order, in the countrey: Hee likewise made Statutes, to the great vtillitie of the cõmon Weale, and conseruacion of the Indians: In this season, was discouered in the Comarkes, or borders of Cusco, the richest mynes of Golde, that vnto this day, the like at any time had not beene seene: especially, in a riuer, called Carabaya, in which Mynes, one Indian hath gathered 50. poyzes in one daye: and al the countrey was throughly quieted, and the Indian people cherished and defended, from the greate wronges which in former time they receiued.

At this time, came *Gonsalo Pisarro* to Cusco: for till now, hée could not obtayne lycence so to do. And after that hee had abode there certaine dayes, he went to Charcas, to deale in matters of his profite, and there remayned, till the Viceroy *Blasco Nunez Vela*, came into the countrey.

FINIS.

The discouery of the ritche Mynes of Potosi, & how captaine Carauajall toke it into his power.



FOrtune hauing shewed her selfe so amiable to Captaine *Carauajall*, it appeareth ỳ now shee hath brought him to the top of the Hill of Prosperitie. It happened that after certaine dayes, that the Indians and *Anaconas* of *Iuan de villa Roell*, Cittizen of the Towne of Plata, went trauailing in the countrey, about 18. leagues distant from the sayde Towne, they chaunced to come to a bigbe Hill, scituated in a Playne, in the which, they found manifest tokens of siluer, wherupon they began to melte out of a vayne which seemed riche.

The riches was so great which heare they founde, that

almost in euery vayne where they made their ensay, they founde the greatest parte of Ewre to be fine sluer, and the baseste Mines were by valuacion .480. duckets, in euery hundred weight of Ewre, which is the greatest riches, that euer hath ben sæn or written of. When the Justice of the towne of Plate, had vnderstandynge of this fortunate successe, the Ruler of the sayd Towne came & deuided the said Mynes amonge the townes men, and eche of them made his choyse according to his lot.

The Indians and Anacoras, which came thither to worke were many in number, in sutch sort that in short time they built at the foote of the saide hill, a Towne to dwell in, which multiplied in suche wise, that there inhabited of Indian workemen aboue. 7000. persons, which did so well vnderstand that businesse, that they came to agræment with their maisters, to allow vnto them a wækely pention: but their gayne was twise so muche as they payde vnto their maysters.

The vaines of these Mines is of sutche qualitie, that the Ewre wil not melt with ỹ winde of Bellowes, as in other Mines are accustomed: but their meltyng is in certain litle Furnaces, called Guayras, wherein they vse to melt with coles and shæpes dung, with the only force of the ayre, without any other instrument. These Mines are called Potosi, by reason that al the borders there about are so called.

These Indian workemen are riche, for he that hath but foure or fiue thousand poyzes, is counted but poore: notwithstandyng the great pension or tribute which they pay vnto their maisters, and all such workemen, which come thither to worke, will not willingly depart from thence, by reason that their paines & peril is not comparable to other Mines, by blowynge of the bellowes, with the greate smoke of the coles: and likewise the Sulfer of the vaynes of Ewre.

When the reperticion of these Mines were made, they began to prouide all sortes of necessary Victualles for the workemen, which was a thing very difficil to do, considerynge ỹ great number of Indians which daily came to serue

in

in thoſe woꝛkes, wherby victuailes grew to ſuch a dearth, that a buſhell of Maiz, came to be woꝛth twentie caſtlins of Gold, and a buſhell of Wheate as much: and a Sacke of the earbes, called Coca, was woꝛth. 30. poyꝛes, yea, and afterward it came to bee derer: yet thꝛough the great treaſure which there was founde, all the other Mines were left vnhabited, and eſpecially the Mines of Porco, where *Hernando Piſarro* had a great poꝛcion of ground, out of the whiche hee gathered great riches.

The Mines alſo which gathered gold in Cambaya, & other riuers, left their woꝛkes & came to Potoſi, becauſe they foũd there greater pꝛofit without cõpariſon. They which vnderſtand in theſe woꝛkes, holde opinion that by manifeſt tokens theſe Mines are of perpetuitie.

With this good ſucceſſe, Captayne *Carauajal* began to gather great ſummes of treaſure, in ſuch ſoꝛte, ỹ he toke poſſeſſion of al the Indians and Anaconas, of ſuch Spaniards as were ſlayne oꝛ fled, oꝛ had bæn agaynſt him in his foꝛmer warre: ſo that in ſhoꝛt time he obtained into his power, the ſum of ſeuen hundꝛed thouſand poyꝛes, and would not therof ayde his ſoldiours with any thing, who had folowed him in al his warres: whervpon they began to murmur among them ſelues, and were minded to kill him.

The chief of this mutiny, were *Luis pardomo*, *Alonſo de Camargo*, *Diego de Balmazeda*, & *Diego de Luxan*: there were nere 30. perſons, which determined to execute the ſayd pꝛetence within one month after *Carauajal* was come to the town of Plata: But thꝛough a miſchance which hapned, they deferred the matter til another day. This pꝛactiſe was not ſo ſecretly wꝛought, but that *Carauajal* came to knowledge therof, whervpõ he commanded *Luis Pardomo*, *Camargo*, *Orbaneja*, *Balmaſeda*, and other. 10. oꝛ 12. perſons of the pꝛincipalleſt to be quartered, and others baniſhed: ſo ỹ with the execution of ſutch cruell Juſtices, in cauſes of Mutynies, the people were ſo feared, that they neuer durſt at any time after to deale in the like pꝛactiſes.

FINIS.

The Table of the Chapters contayned in this present Booke.

Of the notice had of Peru, & how the discouery was begun. ca. 1. fo. 1

How Don Francisco Pisarro, abode in the Ile of Gorgona, and how with a small companye of men, hee sayled beyond the Equinoctiall Lyne. cap. 2. fo. 3

How Don Francisco Pisarro came into Spayne, to giue knowledge of his trauaile, & discouery of Peru to the Emperor his Maiestie ca. 3 fo. 4

Of the people which inhabite vnder the Equinoctiall Lyne, and other notable thinges which there are found. cap. 4. fo. 4.

Of the vaynes of Pitche, which are found at the Cape, called Destabelen, & of the Giants, which somtime dwelt in those parts. ca. 5. fo. 5

Of the people and thinges which are beyonde the Equinoctiall Lyne, toward the South, alonge the Sea coaste. ca. 6. fo. 7.

Of the ordenary winde, which bloweth in the Playnes, and the reason of the dryues of that soyle. cap. 7. fo. 9.

Of the qualitie of the Mountaynes of Peru, and the habitation of Indians and Christians cap. 8. fo. 11.

Of ỹ cities of Christians which are in the moũtaines of Peru. ca. 9 fo. 13

Of ỹ opinion which ỹ Indians held, touching their creatiõ. ca. 10 fo. 16

Of the rites & sacrifice, which the Indians vsed in Peru. cap. 11. fo. id.

What the Indians opinion is, touchinge the resurrection of the body. ca 12. fo. 17

Of the Origen of the Kings of peru, which were called Ingas. ca. 13 fo. id.

Of the notable things which Guaynacaua built in Peru cap. 14 fo. 19

Of the estate of the Warres in Peru, at the time of the Spanyardes comming into that Countrey. cap. 15. fo. 22

The second Booke.

Of the Conquest, atchiued by Don Francisco Pisarro, and his men in the Prouince of Peru, cap. 1 fo. 25

Of thinges which happened to the Gouernour, in the Iland of Puna, and the conquest therof. cap. 2 fo. 26

How the Gouernour went to Tumbez, and of the conquest which hee there obtayned, vntill hee inhabited the citie of S. Mighell. ca. 3. fo. id

How the gouernor went to Caxamalca, & what there hapned. ca. 4 fo. 28

How ỹ battaile was fought w̃ Atabaliba, & he taken prisoner. ca. 5 fo. 29

How Atabaliba commaunded his Brother Guascar to be slayne, and how Hernando Pisarro discouered in the countrey. cap. 6 fo. 32

How Atabaliba was put to death vpon surmise, that hee would haue slaine the Christians, and how Don Diego de Almagro went into Peru, the seconde Journey. cap. 7 fo. 34

The Table.

How Ruminagui, Captayne to Atabaliba rebelled, & made insurrection in the land of Quito, & how the gouernor passed to Cusco. ca. 8 fo 36
How Captaine Benalcasar went to the conquest of Quito. cap. 9 fo 38
How pedro de Aluarado came to Peru & what hapned vnto him. ca. 10 fo 39
How Don Diego de Almagro, met with Don pedro de Aluarado, and what followed. cap. 11 fo. 41
How Don Diego de Almagro, and Don pedro de Aluarado, met with Captayne Quixquix, and what passed betweene them. cap 12 fo. 42
How the Gouernour payde to Don pedro, the 100000 pezos, according to agreemente, and how Don Diego would intrude into the gouernment of Cusco. cap. 13 fo 44

The thirde Booke.

How Don Diego de Almagro, toke his iorney toward Chili ca 1 fo 45
Of the paines & troubles that Don Diego and his army passed in ye way toward Chili, & of certain particularities of ye coūtrey. ca 2 fo. 46
Of the returne of Hernando pisarro, into Peru, of the presents which he brought with him, and of the rebellion of the Indians. cap. 3 fo. 48
How Don Diego de Almagro, besieged Cusco, and tooke Hernando pisarro prisoner. cap. 4 fo. 49
How the Indians slew many succours, which the Gouernour sente to ayde his Brother in Cusco. cap. 5 fo. 51
How the Marques, sent to demaund helpe, into diuerse partes, & how Captayne Alonso de Aluarado came to ayde him. cap 6 fo. 52
How the Marques went to Cusco, to succour his Brother, and by the way as hee wente, hearinge of the victory of Alonso de Aluarado, hee returned to the Cittie of the Kinges. cap. 7 fo. 54
How the Marques gathered a new Army, and how Alonso de Aluarado and Gonsalo Pisarro, brake out of Prison. cap 8 fo 55
How both the Gouernors met, and how Hernando Pisarro was set at liberty. cap. 9 fo. 56
How ye Marques proceeded against Don Diego, and how hee retyred to Cusco. cap 10 Eodem
How Hernando Pisarro wente towarde Cusco, with his Armye, and the Battayle of Salinas. cap. 11. fo. 57
What happened after the Battayle of Salinas was fought, and how Hernando pisarro returned into Spayne. cap. 12 fo 59
What hapned to captain Valdiuia, in his voiage toward chili. ca. 13 f. 61

The fourth Booke.

How Gonsalo pisarro prepared his Iorney to the countrey of zinamon cap. 1, fo. 62

The Table.

How Gonsalo pisarro departed from Quito, and came to the countrey of Zinamon, and what happened in his waye. cap. 2 fo Eodem

Of the villages, and countreyes, that Gonsalo pisarro passed, til he came to the place where hee built a Vergantine. cap. 3 fo. 63

How Francisco de Arellana fled with the Vergantine, and what trouble happened by the wante therof. cap. 4 fo. 64

How Gonsalo pisarro returned to Quito, and what extremities he passed. cap. 5 fo. 66

How the dwellers at Chili, procured the Marques death. cap. 6 fo. 67

How ꝯ Marques was auised of ꝯ conspiracy pretended. cap. 7 fo. 68

Of the death of the Marques Don Francisco pisarro. cap. 8 fo. 70

Of the natural condicion, custome, and qualitie, of the Lord Marques, and also of Don Diego de Almagro. cap. 9 fo. 72

How Don Diego de Almagro gathered an Army, & put certayne Gentlemen to death, and how Alonso de Aluarado rose on the behalfe of his Maiestie. cap. 10 fo. 75

How the Cittie of Cusco arose on the Kinges side, and chose for their cheefe Captaine, Pedro Aluarez Holguin, & what followed. ca. 11 fo. 76

How Don Diego wente to seeke Pedro Aluarez, and when hee could not ouertake him, hee passed to Cusco. cap. 12 fo. 77

How Vaca de Castro, came to the Campe of Pedro Aluarez, and Alonso de Aluarado, who receiued him for their Gouernor, and what followed. cap. 13 fo. 79

How Don Diego, slue Garcia de Aluarado in Cusco, and how hee made all his power against Vaca de Castro. cap. 14 fo. 80

How Vaca de Castro departed from the Cittie of the Kinges, to Xauxa, and what there was doone. cap. 15 fo. 81

How Vaca de Castro went with his Host, from Xauxa, to Guamanga, and what hee passed with Don Diego. cap. 16 fo. 82

How Vaca de Castro, brought his Army into the Feelde, to giue the battayle, and what thereupon followed. cap. 17 fo. 83

How Vaca de Castro, moued forward his squadrons, against Don Diego cap. 18 fo. 84

How the battayle of Chpaas was fought, cap. 19 fo. 85

How Vaca de Castro, gaue vnto his souldiers for the victory. ca. 20 fo. 87

Of the Justice, which was executed vpon ꝯ offenders, cap. 21 fo. 88

How Vaca de Castro sent to discouer the Countrey, into seuerall places. cap. 22 fo.

Of the ritch Mynes of Potosi. cap. 23 fo.

FINIS.